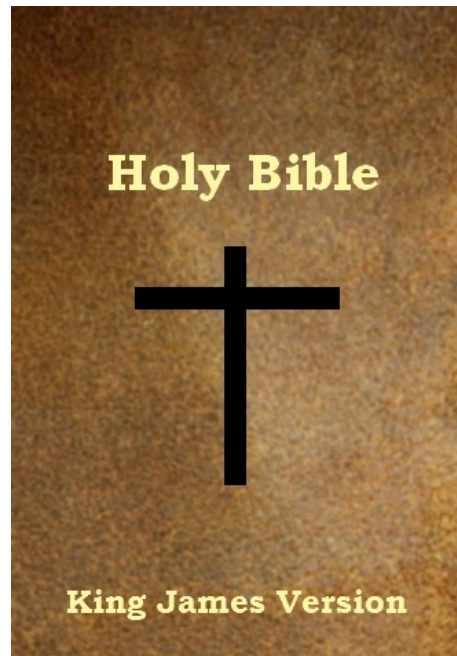


# **Finding Peace, Hope, Truth and Life Through The Study of God's Word**



**Millions around the world are lost because they haven't been introduced to the truth found in God's word. But millions of others are lacking understanding of God's word even though they have gone to church all their lives. Personal Bible study is the answer. In just 29 lessons you can study and learn the most important truths found in God's word. You can do this in the comfort and security of your own home.**

**by**

**John Durr**

**[AmericasComingJudgment.com](http://AmericasComingJudgment.com)**

Copyright © 2006-2015 John Durr. All Rights Reserved. Permission is granted to share this Bible Study Guide with others under the following conditions. It must be for non-profit purposes only. You may not charge for the study guide. The study guide may not be edited or altered in any way. The copyright must not be altered or deleted.

All texts come from the King James Version unless otherwise noted.

# TABLE OF CONTENTS

| Chapter   | Pg  |
|---|-----|
| Introduction - Principals of Bible Interpretation ..... | 5   |
| 1. God's Word .....                                     | 8   |
| 2. Who Is Jesus .....                                   | 12  |
| 3. Sin .....  | 25  |
| 4. God's Law .....                                      | 33  |
| 5. Salvation — What is it? .....                        | 36  |
| 6. Salvation – How Do We Get It? .....                  | 40  |
| 7. Faith .....  | 52  |
| 8. Grace .....  | 57  |
| 9. Repentance .....                                     | 63  |
| 10. Confession .....                                    | 67  |
| 11. Forgiveness .....                                   | 68  |
| 12. Prayer .....  | 74  |
| 13. God In Us .....                                     | 79  |
| 14. Servant – Heir – King .....                         | 81  |
| 15. A New Testament .....                               | 85  |
| 16. A New Covenant .....                                | 89  |
| 17. The New Covenant & Obedience .....                  | 93  |
| 18. The Sovereignty of God .....                        | 99  |
| 19. God's Purpose For Our Lives .....                   | 109 |
| 20. Growing In Christ .....                             | 116 |
| 21. Satan .....   | 129 |
| 22. Why God Judges .....                                | 139 |
| 23. Who Are The Jews? .....                             | 147 |
| 24. Israel Judged .....                                 | 156 |
| 25. God's Judgment .....                                | 166 |
| 26. What Happens After You Die .....                    | 171 |

|  |     |
|--|-----|
| 27. Hell – What Is It? .....           | 181 |
| 28. The Leaven of False Doctrine ..... | 187 |
| 29. Hope And Healing For Today .....   | 191 |
| 30. The Sinner's Prayer .....          | 199 |
| Appendix .....                         | 201 |

# Introduction - Principles Of Bible Interpretation

## The Key To Bible Study

### God Is Love

The Bible contains history, laws, instruction and prophecy. Much of the history and prophecy of the Bible is both graphic and violent. It is important to always remember that **“God is love.”** (1 John 4:8) It is sometimes hard to see God's love in events in the Bible. We must remember to look at the bigger picture. A loving father disciplines his children; he also protects them. As our loving Father, God disciplines us and protects us. Jesus states: “As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent.” (Revelation 3:19)

In order to protect us, God must sometimes destroy those who seek to destroy us. God also brings judgment on people and nations because of His love. His judgment is intended as an example so that others might repent and be saved.

### God Doesn't Change

The God of the Old Testament is the same God of the New Testament; He hasn't changed. God states: “For I am the LORD, I change not;” (Malachi 3:6). Since God does not change, He will not contradict Himself. Therefore, the Bible will not contradict itself.

The prophet Isaiah writes: “The grass withereth, the flower fadeth: but the word of our God shall stand for ever.” (Isaiah 40:8) The psalmist writes: “Thy word is true from the beginning: and every one of thy righteous judgments endureth for ever.” (Psalm 119:160) The Apostle Peter writes: “But the word of the Lord endureth for ever. And this is the word which by the gospel is preached unto you.” (1 Peter 1:25) And in the book of Revelation, Jesus states: “I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last.” (Revelation 22:13)

### Use The Whole Bible

The Apostle Paul instructs us: “And that from a child thou hast known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus. All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: That the man of God may be perfect, throughly furnished unto all good works.” (2 Timothy 3:15-17) Paul was a scholar of the Old Testament and he frequently quotes it. He is telling us to use the all the Bible for our “ instruction in righteousness.”

Jesus used all the scripture to teach His disciples about Himself. Luke writes: “Then he said unto them, O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken: Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory? And beginning at Moses and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself.” (Luke 24:25-27)

Further, the Bible was written in such a way that it must be studied if you want to know the truth. You don't need to be a scholar because the author will lead you through His Holy Spirit but you must be willing to search and study. The prophet Isaiah writes: “Whom shall he teach knowledge? and

whom shall he make to understand doctrine? them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts. For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little" (Isaiah 28:9-10). Bible study requires searching the scriptures and building one text upon another. No text in an Island; every text and every textual interpretation must be in harmony with the rest of scripture. Jesus said: "by the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established." (Matthew 18:16; see also 2 Corinthians 13:1) This equally applies to God's word; by two or three verses shall a doctrine be established.

## **Context**

The Bible was written over thousands of years and was finished approximately 1,900 years ago. When studying and interpreting the Bible we must take into consideration the context. During the historical period in which the Bible was written the customs were much different than today. When appropriate, it is important to look at texts in their historical context.

When reading we can ask ourselves who, what why, when and where. Asking these questions will help us keep what we are reading in proper perspective and in proper context.

The Bible contains history, laws, instruction and prophecy. The history and laws are usually literal but the instruction and prophecy can be either literal or allegorical. An allegory is a symbolic fictional expression. God uses allegory in parables and in dreams and visions. Allegory is used to illustrate a point. The point being illustrated is to be taken literally but the fictional expression used to illustrate the point is not. Not all dreams and visions are allegorical; some are literal.

The parables and allegorical dreams and visions in the Bible are usually obvious. When we read these parable, we must remember that the illustrations used were significant to the people at the time they were written. Also, when prophets describe dreams concerning the last-days, we must consider the possibility that they saw technological advances but had difficulty describing them. Their language had no words for the technology of today. For this reason, sometimes it is difficult to tell whether a prophecy is literal or allegorical.

Concerning the source of Bible prophecy, the Apostle Peter wrote: "We have also a more sure word of prophecy; whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the day star arise in your hearts: Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation. For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost." (2 Peter 1:19-21)

Since prophetic dreams and visions are from God, only God can interpret them. Therefore, the guidance of the Holy Spirit is essential in interpreting not only Bible prophecy but all scripture. Because we need the Holy Spirit to guide us into truth, prayer is probably the most important element in interpreting the Bible.

## **Intent**

What is your intent in studying the Bible, the word of God? The Lord says: "And ye shall seek me, and find me, when ye shall search for me with all your heart." (Jeremiah 29:13) If you are searching for God and for truth, you will find it! If you are reading or studying for some other reason, it is quite possible you won't find truth. The Apostle Paul writes: "But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned." (1 Corinthians 2:14)

## Prayer

Concerning the Holy Spirit, Jesus instructed His disciples: "But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.... But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me:" (John 14:26 and 15:26) In John 16:13, Jesus says: "Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come."

Jesus will send the Holy Spirit to guide you into all truth and to give you understanding. All you have to do is ask. Jesus made the following promise to His disciple which applies to us as well: "And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you. For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? or if he ask a fish, will he for a fish give him a serpent? Or if he shall ask an egg, will he offer him a scorpion? If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?" (Luke 11:9-13)

The following is an example of a prayer that you might say: *Holy, loving and merciful Father, I come to You in faith that You will fulfill your promise in me. You promised to send Your Holy Spirit to guide me to all truth, if I asked. I now ask that You send Your Holy Spirit to guide me into all truth and I thank You for hearing and answering my prayer. In the name of Jesus Christ, Amen.*

## Word Studies

The Bible is perfect in its original language. English is not the original language of the Bible. The Bible was written in Aramaic, Hebrew and Greek. Generally, the Old Testament was written in Hebrew and the New Testament in Greek. The King James Version of the Bible is the most accurate English translation. It can sometimes be hard to understand but the more you read it, the easier it is to understand. The modern English versions may be easier to understand but their translations are far less accurate. They are less accurate because they have been edited by their translators. Thousands of words have been removed. You certainly can't understand something that isn't there. For this reason I highly recommend the King James Bible. All you need is a dictionary to look up words you don't understand. None the less, you can get all the basic teachings in the modern versions. But some of the advanced teachings you will not find.

When a person gets into advanced studies, a Hebrew and Greek dictionary are very helpful. Within Hebrew and Greek are words for which English has no direct equivalent. Further, Hebrew and Greek words can have different meanings depending on the context in which they are used. Therefore, it is often possible to gain additional insight into what God is saying by looking at the original language and using a Hebrew or Greek dictionary.

God is an awesome and dynamic communicator. His words are alive and multidimensional. You can study them over and over and continue to get deeper and deeper understanding. Let the author of the word guide you through His Holy Spirit. He will not fail you nor disappoint you!

# #1

## God's Word

This is the first of 29 Bible Studies. These studies are based on God's word contained in the Holy Bible King James Version (KJV). The reliability of God's word has been proven throughout the centuries. Archeology has proven the Bible's historic accuracy time and again. World events have proven Bible prophecy to be 100 percent accurate. But who wrote the Bible and what is its purpose? This study will answer these questions. But we will also discover that the word is as mysterious as the trinity.

Before we begin this study, please read the introduction *Principals of Bible Interpretation* if you have not yet done so. Let's begin with Prayer: *Holy, loving and merciful Father, I come to You in faith that You will fulfill your promise in me. You promised to send Your Holy Spirit to guide me into all truth, if I asked. I ask now that You send Your Holy Spirit to guide me into all truth and I thank You for hearing and answering my prayer. In the name of Jesus Christ, Amen.*

### Where Did The Bible Come From?

**2 Timothy 3:16** – All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness:

**2 Peter 1:20-21** – <sup>20</sup> Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation. <sup>21</sup> For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.

**John 17:8** – [Jesus prayed, Father:] For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me.

**John 15:15** – Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you.

Moses wrote the first 5 books of the bible. These are: Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers, and Deuteronomy. How was he able to do this? He writes:

**Exodus 33:11** – And the LORD spake unto Moses face to face, as a man speaketh unto his friend....

### What Is The Purpose of Scripture?

**Jeremiah 9:23-24** – <sup>23</sup> Thus saith the LORD, Let not the wise man glory in his wisdom, neither let the mighty man glory in his might, let not the rich man glory in his riches: <sup>24</sup> But let him that glorieth glory in this, that he understandeth and knoweth me, that I am the LORD which exercise lovingkindness, judgment, and righteousness, in the earth: for in these things I delight, saith the LORD.

**John 5:24 & 39** – [Jesus said:] Verily, verily, I say unto you, **He that heareth my word**, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is



passed from death unto life.... Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me.

**Romans 15:4** – For whatsoever things were written aforetime **were written for our learning**, that **we through patience and comfort of the scriptures might have hope**.

**Romans 16:25-26** – Now to him that is of power to stablish you **according to my gospel**, and the preaching of Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of the mystery, which was kept secret since the world began, But now is made manifest, and by the scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations for the obedience of faith:

**2 Timothy 3:15** – And that from a child thou hast known the holy **scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation** through faith which is in Christ Jesus.

**2 Timothy 3:16-17** – **All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness**: That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.

**2 Timothy 2:15** – Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.

## **The Word Shall Endure Forever**

**Isaiah 40:8** – The grass withereth, the flower fadeth: but the word of our God shall stand for ever.

**Psalms 119:160** – Thy word is true from the beginning: and every one of thy righteous judgments endureth for ever.

**1 Peter 1:25** – But the word of the Lord endureth for ever. And this is the word which by the gospel is preached unto you.

## **The Word of God Must Be Fulfilled**

**Mark 14:49** – I was daily with you in the temple teaching, and ye took me not: but the scriptures must be fulfilled.

**Luke 24:45-46** – <sup>45</sup> Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures, <sup>46</sup> And said unto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day:

**John 2:19-22** – <sup>19</sup> Jesus answered and said unto them, Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up. <sup>20</sup> Then said the Jews, Forty and six years was this temple in building, and wilt thou rear it up in three days? <sup>21</sup> But he spake of the temple of his body. <sup>22</sup> When therefore he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembered that he had said this unto them; and they believed the scripture, and the word which Jesus had said.

**Revelation 17:17** – For God hath put in their hearts to fulfil his will, and to agree, and give their kingdom unto the beast, until the words of God shall be fulfilled.

## The Power of The Word

**Hebrews 4:12** – For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any twoedged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

**Romans 10:17** – So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.

**Acts 19:20** – So mightily grew the word of God and prevailed.

**Colossians 1:5-6** – <sup>5</sup> For the hope which is laid up for you in heaven, whereof ye heard before in the word of the truth of the gospel; <sup>6</sup> Which is come unto you, as it is in all the world; and bringeth forth fruit, as it doth also in you, since the day ye heard of it, and knew the grace of God in truth:

**1 Thessalonians 2:13** – For this cause also thank we God without ceasing, because, when ye received the word of God which ye heard of us, ye received it not as the word of men, but as it is in truth, the word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that believe.

**1 John 2:14** – I have written unto you, fathers, because ye have known him that is from the beginning. I have written unto you, young men, because ye are strong, and the word of God abideth in you, and ye have overcome the wicked one.

## Blessings for the Reader of God's Word

**Revelation 1:3** – Blessed is he that readeth, and they that hear the words of this prophecy, and keep those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand.

## The Word Made Flesh

**John 1:1-3 and 14** – <sup>1</sup> In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. <sup>2</sup> The same was in the beginning with God. <sup>3</sup> All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made.... <sup>14</sup> And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.

**Revelation 19:13** – And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and his name is called The Word of God.

## Understanding The Word

**Isaiah 28:9-10** – <sup>9</sup> Whom shall he teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand doctrine? them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts. <sup>10</sup> For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little:

**1 Corinthians 2:14** – But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.

**John 16:13** – Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will shew you

things to come.

**1 Corinthians 2:10** – But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God.

## Summary

The Bible is the Holy word of God. It will endure forever and its prophecies must be fulfilled. All of the Bible was given by inspiration of God and God uses the Bible to correct us, teach us, change us and show us the way to salvation. The word of God has power; it can convict the hearts of men and women and bring wonderful changes in our lives. God gives a blessing to those who study his word. The Bible must be understood through the guidance of the Holy Spirit. Therefore, we must pray for the Holy Spirit to give us understanding and not depend upon our own intellect. When we study, we must dig into the word and carefully build one truth upon another. We won't find all the answers in one chapter; we will have search the scripture and build one principal upon another. But when we depend upon the Holy Spirit and we diligently search the scripture, the Holy Spirit will lead us to all truth and salvation in Jesus Christ.

## Additional Study

See my report: "The True and the Corrupt Word of God". This is an extensive study on which ancient bible text is the actual word of God and which has been corrupted by man. It also shows how to determine which translations use the authentic word of God and which use the word which has been corrupted by man.

## #2

# Who Is Jesus?

Jesus is known the world over by many people of many different religions. But just who is He and what are His characteristics? Some say He was a good man. Others say He was a prophet. In fact, Jesus is the central figure of the Bible. In order to be saved, we must know and accept who Jesus is, what He did and what He is doing now!

## Jesus – Born Of A Virgin

**Isaiah 7:14** – Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a sign; Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel.

**Matthew 1:20-25** – <sup>20</sup> But while he thought on these things, behold, the angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost. <sup>21</sup> And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins. <sup>22</sup> Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying, <sup>23</sup> Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us. <sup>24</sup> Then Joseph being raised from sleep did as the angel of the Lord had bidden him, and took unto him his wife: <sup>25</sup> And knew her not till she had brought forth her firstborn son: and he called his name JESUS. (See also Luke 1:26-35)

## Jesus The Son Of God

**Luke 1:35** – And the angel answered and said unto her [Mary], The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the **Son of God**.

**Matthew 3:16-17** – <sup>16</sup> And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him: <sup>17</sup> And lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

**Matthew 8:28-29** – <sup>28</sup> And when he was come to the other side into the country of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way. <sup>29</sup> And, behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou **Son of God**? art thou come hither to torment us before the time?

**Matthew 27:54** – Now when the centurion, and they that were with him, watching Jesus, saw the earthquake, and those things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truly this was the **Son of God**. (See also Mark 15:39)

**Mark 1:1** – The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ, the **Son of God**;

**Mark 3:11** – And unclean spirits, when they saw him, fell down before him, and cried, saying, Thou art the **Son of God**. (see also Luke 4:41)

**John 1:34-36** – <sup>34</sup> And I saw, and bare record that this is the **Son of God**. <sup>35</sup> Again the next day after John stood, and two of his disciples; <sup>36</sup> And looking upon Jesus as he walked, he saith, Behold the Lamb of God!

**1 John 5:5** – Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the **Son of God**?

## Jesus – The Faithful Servant

**John 5:19-20** – <sup>19</sup> Then answered Jesus and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise. <sup>20</sup> For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him all things that himself doeth: and he will shew him greater works than these, that ye may marvel.

**John 5:29-30** – <sup>30</sup> I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me.

**John 6:38-40** – <sup>38</sup> For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me. <sup>39</sup> And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day. <sup>40</sup> And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.

**John 8:28-29** – <sup>28</sup> Then said Jesus unto them, When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am he, and that I do nothing of myself; but as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things. <sup>29</sup> And he that sent me is with me: the Father hath not left me alone; for I do always those things that please him.

## Jesus Is Sinless

**Isaiah 53:11** – <sup>11</sup> He shall see of the travail of his soul, and shall be satisfied: by his knowledge shall **my righteous servant justify many; for he shall bear their iniquities**.

**Zechariah 9:9** – <sup>9</sup> Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem: behold, thy King cometh unto thee: **he is just**, and having salvation; lowly, and riding upon an ass, and upon a colt the foal of an ass.

**1 Peter 1:19** – <sup>19</sup> But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb **without blemish and without spot**:

**1 Peter 2:21-22** – <sup>21</sup> For even hereunto were ye called: because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that ye should follow his steps: <sup>22</sup> Who **did no sin**, neither was guile found in his mouth:

**2 Corinthians 5:20-21** – <sup>20</sup> Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech

you by us: we pray you in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God. <sup>21</sup> For he hath made him to be sin for us, **who knew no sin**; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.

**1 John 3:5** – And ye know that he was manifested to take away our sins; and in him is no sin.

**Hebrews 9:14** – How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself **without spot** to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?

## **Jesus Was Crucified, Died And Buried**

**Matthew 27:33-35 and 50 and 59-60** – <sup>33</sup> And when they were come unto a place called Golgotha, that is to say, a place of a skull, <sup>34</sup> They gave him vinegar to drink mingled with gall: and when he had tasted thereof, he would not drink. <sup>35</sup> And they crucified him [Jesus]... <sup>50</sup> Jesus, when he had cried again with a loud voice, yielded up the ghost [died].... <sup>59</sup> And when Joseph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth, <sup>60</sup> And laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock: and he rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulchre, and departed. (See all of Matthew 27 for the full crucifixion story. See also Mark 15, Luke 23 and John 18 and 19.)

**Acts 2:22-23** – <sup>22</sup> Ye men of Israel, hear these words; Jesus of Nazareth, a man approved of God among you by miracles and wonders and signs, which God did by him in the midst of you, as ye yourselves also know: <sup>23</sup> Him, being delivered by the determinate counsel and foreknowledge of God, ye have taken, and by wicked hands have crucified and slain:

## **Jesus Willingly Laid Down His Life**

**John 10:17-18** – <sup>15</sup> As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father: and **I lay down my life for the sheep**. <sup>16</sup> And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd. <sup>17</sup> Therefore doth my Father love me, because **I lay down my life**, that I might take it again. <sup>18</sup> **No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself**. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. This commandment have I received of my Father.

## **Jesus Rose From The Dead**

**Matthew 29:2-7** – <sup>2</sup> And, behold, there was a great earthquake: for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it. <sup>3</sup> His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow: <sup>4</sup> And for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead men. <sup>5</sup> And the angel answered and said unto the women, Fear not ye: for I know that ye seek Jesus, which was crucified. <sup>6</sup> He is not here: for he is risen, as he said. Come, see the place where the Lord lay. <sup>7</sup> And go quickly, and tell his disciples that he is risen from the dead; and, behold, he goeth before you into Galilee; there shall ye see him: lo, I have told you.

**Luke 24:3-9** – <sup>3</sup> And they entered in, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus. <sup>4</sup> And it came to pass, as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold, two men stood by them in shining garments: <sup>5</sup>

And as they were afraid, and bowed down their faces to the earth, they said unto them, Why seek ye the living<sup>a</sup> among the dead? <sup>6</sup> He is not here, but is risen: remember how he spake unto you when he was yet in Galilee, <sup>7</sup> Saying, The Son of man must be delivered into the hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again. <sup>8</sup> And they remembered his words, <sup>9</sup> And returned from the sepulchre, and told all these things unto the eleven, and to all the rest. (See also Mark 16 and John 20)

**Acts 2:32** – This Jesus hath God raised up, whereof we all are witnesses.

**Acts 3:14-15** – <sup>14</sup> But ye denied the Holy One and the Just, and desired a murderer to be granted unto you; <sup>15</sup> And killed the Prince of life, whom God hath raised from the dead; whereof we are witnesses.

**Acts 4:8-10** – <sup>8</sup> Then Peter, filled with the Holy Ghost, said unto them, Ye rulers of the people, and elders of Israel, <sup>9</sup> If we this day be examined of the good deed done to the impotent man, by what means he is made whole; <sup>10</sup> Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised from the dead, even by him doth this man stand here before you whole.

**Acts 13:33-35** – <sup>33</sup> God hath fulfilled the same unto us their children, in that he hath raised up Jesus again; as it is also written in the second psalm, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee. <sup>34</sup> And as concerning that he raised him up from the dead, now no more to return to corruption, he said on this wise, I will give you the sure mercies of David. <sup>35</sup> Wherefore he saith also in another psalm, Thou shalt not suffer thine Holy One to see corruption.

**1 Corinthians 15:3-6** – <sup>3</sup> For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures; <sup>4</sup> And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures: <sup>5</sup> And that he was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve: <sup>6</sup> After that, he was seen of above five hundred brethren at once; of whom the greater part remain unto this present, but some are fallen asleep.

## Image of God

**John 14:7** – If ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also: and from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him.

**John 14:9** – Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? he that hath seen me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou then, Shew us the Father?

**Colossians 1:15** – [Jesus] Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature:

## One With God

**John 10:30** – I and my Father are one.

**John 14:9** – Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? he that hath seen me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou then, Show us the Father?

**John 17:11** – And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one, as

we are.

**1 John 5:7** – For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one. (Note: we'll see below that the word is Jesus. Additionally, this text has been edited in most modern versions.)

## Jesus Came From Heaven

**John 6:38** – For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me.

**John 8:23** – And he said unto them, Ye are from beneath; I am from above: ye are of this world; I am not of this world.

## Jesus Was With God Before The Earth Was Made

**John 17:1, 5 & 24** – <sup>1</sup> These words spake Jesus, and lifted up his eyes to heaven, and said, Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee... <sup>5</sup> And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self with **the glory which I had with thee before the world was**. ... <sup>24</sup> Father, I will that they also, whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am; that they may behold my glory, which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world.

## Jesus Is God Manifest In The Flesh

**John 1:1-2 and 14** – <sup>1</sup> In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. <sup>2</sup> The same was in the beginning with God...<sup>14</sup> And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.

**1 Timothy 3:16** – And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory.

**Hebrews 1:8** – But unto the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever: a sceptre of righteousness is the sceptre of thy kingdom.

## Jesus Is God – The Rock

Jesus is the Rock on which his Church is founded. Jesus stated he would build His church upon the Rock. In Greek he used the word “Petra” which literally means a mass of rock. In the Old Testament we see many references to the Rock. Two different Hebrew words are used. The first is “cela” which means rock, fortress or strong hold. The second is “tsuwr” or “tsur” which means a cliff or sharp rock, boulder, a refuge or mighty God.

**Deuteronomy 32:3-4** – Because I will publish the name of the LORD: ascribe ye greatness unto



our God. **He is the Rock**, his work is perfect: for all his ways are judgment: a God of truth and without iniquity, just and right is he.

**Romans 9:33** – As it is written, Behold, I lay in Sion a stumblingstone and rock of offence: and whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed.

**Psalms 62:2** – Truly my soul waiteth upon God: from him cometh my salvation. He only is my rock and my salvation; he is my defence; I shall not be greatly moved. How long will ye imagine mischief against a man? ye shall be slain all of you: as a bowing wall shall ye be, and as a tottering fence. They only consult to cast him down from his excellency: they delight in lies: they bless with their mouth, but they curse inwardly. Selah. My soul, wait thou only upon God; for my expectation is from him. **He only is my rock** and my salvation: he is my defence; I shall not be moved. In God is my salvation and my glory: the rock of my strength, and my refuge, is in God.

**1 Corinthians 10:2** – And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and **that Rock was Christ**.

**2 Samuel 22:2-3, 32 &47** – And he said, The LORD is my rock, and my fortress, and my deliverer; **The God of my rock**; in him will I trust: he is my shield, and the horn of my salvation, my high tower, and my refuge, my saviour; thou savest me from violence.... For who is God, save the LORD? and **who is a rock**, save our God?... **The LORD liveth; and blessed be my rock**; and exalted be the **God of the rock of my salvation**.

**1 Peter 2:7-8** – Unto you therefore which believe he is precious: but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner, And **a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence**, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient: whereunto also they were appointed.

## Jesus Is God – Redeemer

The Old Testament reveals that God is redeemer. The New Testament reveals that Jesus is redeemer which shows he is God of the Old Testament. Jesus revealed that he existed before Abraham. “Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am.” (John 8:58)

**Psalms 19:14** – Let the words of my mouth, and the meditation of my heart, be acceptable in thy sight, O LORD [Yahovah], my strength, and my **redeemer**.

**Psalms 31:5** – Into thine hand I commit my spirit: thou hast **redeemed me**, O LORD [Yahovah] God of truth.

**Lamentations 3:58** – O Lord [Adonay], thou hast pleaded the causes of my soul; **thou hast redeemed my life**.

**Luke 1:68** – Blessed be the Lord God of Israel; for he hath visited and **redeemed his people**,

**Galatians 3:13** – **Christ hath redeemed** us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree:

**Galatians 4:4-5** – <sup>4</sup> But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law, <sup>5</sup> To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.

**Revelation 5:9-10** – <sup>9</sup> And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation; <sup>10</sup> And hast made us unto our God kings and priests: and we shall reign on the earth.

## Jesus Is God – Saviour

The Old Testament reveals that God is saviour and there is no other saviour. The New Testament reveals that Jesus is saviour which shows he is God of the Old Testament.

**Isaiah 43:3** – For I am the LORD thy God, the Holy One of Israel, thy **Saviour**:...

**Isaiah 45:21** – Tell ye, and bring them near; yea, let them take counsel together: who hath declared this from ancient time? who hath told it from that time? have not I the LORD? and there is no God else beside me; a just God and a **Saviour**; there is none beside me.

**Isaiah 49:21** – ...I the LORD am thy **Saviour and thy Redeemer**, the mighty One of Jacob.

**Isaiah 60:16** – ...I the LORD am thy **Saviour and thy Redeemer**, the mighty One of Jacob.

**Isaiah 43-10-12** – <sup>10</sup> Ye are my witnesses, saith the LORD, and my servant whom I have chosen: that ye may know and believe me, and understand that I am he: before me there was no God formed, neither shall there be after me. <sup>11</sup> I, even I, **am the LORD; and beside me there is no saviour**. <sup>12</sup> I have declared, and have saved, and I have shewed, when there was no strange god among you: therefore ye are my witnesses, saith the LORD, that I am God.

**Hosea 13:4** – Yet I am the LORD thy God from the land of Egypt, and thou shalt know no god but me: for there is **no saviour beside me**.

**Luke 2:11** – For unto you is born this day in the city of David **a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord**.

**Acts 2:21 and 36** – <sup>21</sup> And it shall come to pass, that whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord shall be saved.... <sup>36</sup> Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath made that same Jesus, whom ye have crucified, both Lord and Christ.

**Act 5:31** – Him hath God exalted with his right hand to be a Prince and **a Saviour**, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins.

**Acts 16:33** – Of this man's seed hath God according to his promise raised unto Israel **a Saviour, Jesus**:

**Philippians 3:20** – For our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for **the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ**:

**1 Timothy 1:1** – Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the commandment of **God our Saviour, and Lord Jesus Christ**, which is our hope;

**1 Timothy 2:3-6** – <sup>3</sup> For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour; <sup>4</sup> Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth. <sup>5</sup> For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus; <sup>6</sup> Who gave himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time.

**2 Timothy 1:10** – But is now made manifest by the appearing of **our Saviour Jesus Christ**, who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortality to light through the gospel:

**2 Peter 3:18** – But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our **Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ**. To him be glory both now and for ever. Amen.

**1 John 4:14** – And we have seen and do testify that the Father sent the **Son to be the Saviour** of the world.

**Titus 2:11-14** – <sup>11</sup> For the grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men, <sup>12</sup> Teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world; <sup>13</sup> Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and **our Saviour Jesus Christ**; <sup>14</sup> Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

## Jesus - The Great I AM

When God came to Moses in the burning bush and made him a prophet, Moses asked who should I tell them sent me? “And God [Elohim] said unto Moses, **I AM THAT I AM**: and he said, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, **I AM** hath sent me unto you.” (Exodus 3:14)

In the Book of John, Jesus repeatedly refers to himself as “I am”. I have included only those texts which state “I am” in the original Greek. In some cases the translators added words such as “he”. Words that do not appear in the Greek are included in italics with a strike through.

**John 8:12** – Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, **I am** the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life.

**John 8:18** – **I am** ~~one that~~ bear witness of myself, and the Father that sent me beareth witness of me.

**John 8:24** – I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for if ye believe not that **I am** ~~he~~, ye shall die in your sins.

**John 8:28** – Then said Jesus unto them, When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know that **I am** ~~he~~, and that I do nothing of myself; but as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things.

**John 8:58** – Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, **I am**.

**John 11:25** – Jesus said unto her, **I am** the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live:

**John 13:19** – Now I tell you before it come, that, when it is come to pass, ye may believe that **I am** ~~he~~.

**John 14:6** – Jesus saith unto him, **I am** the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.

## Jesus Is The Creator

**John 1:1-3 and 14** - <sup>1</sup> In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. <sup>2</sup> The same was in the beginning with God. <sup>3</sup> **All things were made by him;** and without him was not any thing made that was made.... <sup>14</sup> And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.

**Ephesians 2:9** – And to make all men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in **God, who created all things by Jesus Christ:** (Note: This is a text that has been changed in most modern versions.)

**Colossians 1:12-17** – <sup>12</sup> Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light: <sup>13</sup> Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son: <sup>14</sup> In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins: <sup>15</sup> Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature: <sup>16</sup> **For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth,** visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him: <sup>17</sup> And he is before all things, and by him all things consist.

**Hebrews 1:1-3 and 8-10** – <sup>1</sup> God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, <sup>2</sup> Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, **by whom also he made the worlds;** <sup>3</sup> Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high;... <sup>8</sup> But unto the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever: a sceptre of righteousness is the sceptre of thy kingdom. <sup>9</sup> Thou hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity; therefore God, even thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows. <sup>10</sup> **And, Thou, Lord, in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth; and the heavens are the works of thine hands:**

## Jesus Has All Power, Wisdom And Knowledge

**Mathew 18:18** – And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth.

**Colossians 2:2-3** – <sup>2</sup> That their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in love, and unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgement of the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ; <sup>3</sup> In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.

**Matthew 18:20** – For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

## Jesus Supplies Our Needs

**Philippians 4:19** – <sup>19</sup> But my God shall supply all your need according to his riches in glory by Christ Jesus.

**Psalm 23** – <sup>1</sup> The LORD is my shepherd; I shall not want. <sup>2</sup> He maketh me to lie down in green pastures: he leadeth me beside the still waters. <sup>3</sup> He restoreth my soul: he leadeth me in the paths of righteousness for his name's sake. <sup>4</sup> Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil: for thou art with me; thy rod and thy staff they comfort me. <sup>5</sup> Thou preparest a table before me in the presence of mine enemies: thou anointest my head with oil; my cup runneth over. <sup>6</sup> Surely goodness and mercy shall follow me all the days of my life: and I will dwell in the house of the LORD for ever.

## Jesus Is Our Protector

**Psalm 34:7** – <sup>7</sup> The angel of the LORD encampeth round about them that fear him, and delivereth them.

**Psalm 37:39-40** – <sup>39</sup> But the salvation of the righteous is of the LORD: he is their strength in the time of trouble. <sup>40</sup> And the LORD shall help them, and deliver them: he shall deliver them from the wicked, and save them, because they trust in him.

**Psalm 121** – <sup>1</sup> I will lift up mine eyes unto the hills, from whence cometh my help. <sup>2</sup> My help cometh from the LORD, which made heaven and earth. <sup>3</sup> He will not suffer thy foot to be moved: he that keepeth thee will not slumber. <sup>4</sup> Behold, he that keepeth Israel shall neither slumber nor sleep. <sup>5</sup> The LORD is thy keeper: the LORD is thy shade upon thy right hand. <sup>6</sup> The sun shall not smite thee by day, nor the moon by night. <sup>7</sup> The LORD shall preserve thee from all evil: he shall preserve thy soul. <sup>8</sup> The LORD shall preserve thy going out and thy coming in from this time forth, and even for evermore.

**Psalm 91** – <sup>1</sup> He that dwelleth in the secret place of the most High shall abide<sup>a</sup> under the shadow of the Almighty. <sup>2</sup> I will say of the LORD, He is my refuge and my fortress: my God; in him will I trust. <sup>3</sup> Surely he shall deliver thee from the snare of the fowler, and from the noisome pestilence. <sup>4</sup> He shall cover thee with his feathers, and under his wings shalt thou trust: his truth shall be thy shield and buckler. <sup>5</sup> Thou shalt not be afraid for the terror by night; nor for the arrow that flieth by day; <sup>6</sup> Nor for the pestilence that walketh in darkness; nor for the destruction that wasteth at noonday. <sup>7</sup> A thousand shall fall at thy side, and ten thousand at thy right hand; but it shall not come nigh thee. <sup>8</sup> Only with thine eyes shalt thou behold and see the reward of the wicked.

<sup>9</sup> Because thou hast made the LORD, which is my refuge, even the most High, thy habitation; <sup>10</sup> There shall no evil befall thee, neither shall any plague come nigh thy dwelling. <sup>11</sup> For he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways. <sup>12</sup> They shall bear thee up in their hands, lest thou dash thy foot against a stone. <sup>13</sup> Thou shalt tread upon the lion and adder<sup>b</sup>: the young lion and the dragon shalt thou trample under feet. <sup>14</sup> Because he hath set his love upon me, therefore will I deliver him: I will set him on high, because he hath known my name. <sup>15</sup> He shall call upon me, and I will answer him: I will be with him in trouble; I will deliver him, and honour him. <sup>16</sup> With long<sup>c</sup> life will I satisfy him, and shew him my salvation.

**2 Timothy 4:18** – <sup>18</sup> And the Lord shall deliver me from every evil work, and will preserve me unto his heavenly kingdom: to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

**2 Thessalonians 3:3** – <sup>3</sup> But the Lord is faithful, who shall stablish you, and keep you from evil.

## Jesus Is Judge

**Jeremiah 9:23-24** – <sup>23</sup> Thus saith the LORD, Let not the wise man glory in his wisdom, neither let the mighty man glory in his might, let not the rich man glory in his riches: <sup>24</sup> But let him that glorieth glory in this, that he understandeth and knoweth me, that I am the LORD which exercise lovingkindness, **judgment**, and righteousness, in the earth: for in these things I delight, saith the LORD.

**Acts 10:42** – <sup>42</sup> And he commanded us to preach unto the people, and to testify that it is he which was ordained of God to be the **Judge of quick and dead**.

**2 Timothy 4:8** – <sup>8</sup> Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which **the Lord, the righteous judge**, shall give me at that day: and not to me only, but unto all them also that love his appearing.

**Revelation 19:11-16** – <sup>11</sup> And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness **he doth judge** and make war. <sup>12</sup> His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written, that no man knew, but he himself. <sup>13</sup> And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and his name is called The Word of God. <sup>14</sup> And the armies which were <sup>†</sup> in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean. <sup>15</sup> And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and he treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God. <sup>16</sup> And he hath on his vesture and on his thigh a name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

## Jesus Is Our Defense Attorney

**1 John 2:1-2** – <sup>1</sup> My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, **we have an advocate** with the Father, **Jesus Christ** the righteous: <sup>2</sup> And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world.

**Romans 8:34** – <sup>34</sup> Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us.

## Jesus – Our Brother

**Matthew 12:50** – For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother. (See also Mark 3:35)

## Jesus – Our Friend

**John 15:15-15** – <sup>14</sup> Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you. <sup>15</sup> Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you.

**Exodus 33:11** – And the LORD spake unto Moses face to face, as a man speaketh unto his friend....

**James 2:23** – And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called the Friend of God.

## Jesus Ascended Into Heaven

**Mark 16:19-20** – <sup>19</sup> So then after the Lord had spoken unto them, he was received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God. <sup>20</sup> And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with them, and confirming the word with signs following. Amen.

**Luke 24:50-51** – <sup>50</sup> And he led them out as far as to Bethany, and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them. <sup>51</sup> And it came to pass, while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and carried up into heaven.

**Acts 1:9-11** – <sup>9</sup> And when he had spoken these things, while they beheld, he was taken up; and a cloud received him out of their sight. <sup>10</sup> And while they looked stedfastly toward heaven as he went up, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel; <sup>11</sup> Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven.

## Jesus Is Coming Again

**Acts 1:11** – <sup>11</sup> Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? **this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go** into heaven.

**John 14:2-3** – <sup>2</sup> In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. <sup>3</sup> And if I go and prepare a place for you, **I will come again**, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also.

**1 Thessalonians 4:15-17** – <sup>15</sup> For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we which are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord shall not prevent them which are asleep. <sup>16</sup> For **the Lord himself shall descend from heaven** with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: <sup>17</sup> Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.

**Revelation 1:5-7** – <sup>5</sup> And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood, <sup>6</sup> And hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen. <sup>7</sup> **Behold, he cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see him**, and they also which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him. Even so, Amen.

## Summary

Jesus is the the Son of God. He is creator and the God of the Old Testament. He is the word made flesh. He left heaven to become a man and live among us and to redeem us. He was born of a virgin mother. He lived a sinless life. He was crucified and buried. He willingly laid down His life, it was not taken from Him. He died for our sins. On the third day, He rose from the dead. His death and resurrection has redeemed us from our sins. He ascended into heaven and is seated at the right hand of the Father.

Jesus is our creator, our redeemer, our provider, our protector, our judge, our defense attorney, our brother and our friend. He is coming again!



# #3

## Sin

What is sin and why should we care? God reveals to us that the sinner shall die. Therefore, we desperately need to know what sin is and if and what the remedy is!

### What Is Sin?

**1 John 3:4** – Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law: for **sin is the transgression of the law.**

**James 4:17** – <sup>17</sup> Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin.

**Romans 14:23** – <sup>23</sup> And he that doubteth is damned if he eat, because he eateth not of faith: **for whatsoever is not of faith is sin.**

**Romans 7:7** – What shall we say then? Is the law sin? God forbid. Nay, I had not known sin, but by the law: for I had not known lust, except the law had said, Thou shalt not covet.

### Sin Originated In Heaven

**Isaiah 14:12-15** – <sup>12</sup> How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! <sup>13</sup> For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: <sup>14</sup> I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. <sup>15</sup> Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit.

**Revelation 12:7-9** – <sup>7</sup> And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels, <sup>8</sup> And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. <sup>9</sup> And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

**Ezekiel 28:13-19** – <sup>13</sup> Thou hast been in Eden the garden of God; every precious stone was thy covering, the sardius, topaz, and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx, and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald, and the carbuncle, and gold: the workmanship of thy tabrets and of thy pipes was prepared in thee in the day that thou wast created. <sup>14</sup> Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth; and I have set thee so: thou wast upon the holy mountain of God; thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire. <sup>15</sup> Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created, till iniquity was found in thee. <sup>16</sup> By the multitude of thy merchandise they have filled the midst of thee with violence, and thou hast sinned: therefore I will cast thee as profane out of the mountain of God: and I will destroy thee, O covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire. <sup>17</sup> Thine heart was lifted up because of thy beauty, thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness: I will cast thee to the ground, I will lay thee before kings, that they may behold thee. <sup>18</sup> Thou hast defiled thy sanctuaries by the multitude of thine iniquities, by the iniquity of thy traffick; therefore will I bring forth a fire from the

midst of thee, it shall devour thee, and I will bring thee to ashes upon the earth in the sight of all them that behold thee. <sup>19</sup> All they that know thee among the people shall be astonished at thee: thou shalt be a terror, and never shalt thou be any more.

## Original Sin of Man

**Genesis 2:16-17 and 3:1-6** – <sup>16</sup> And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat: <sup>17</sup> But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.

<sup>1</sup> Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? <sup>2</sup> And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: <sup>3</sup> But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die. <sup>4</sup> And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: <sup>5</sup> For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil. <sup>6</sup> And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat.

## Who Has Sinned?

**Romans 3:9-12** – <sup>9</sup> What then? are we better than they? No, in no wise: for we have before proved both Jews and Gentiles, that they are **all under sin**; <sup>10</sup> As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one: <sup>11</sup> There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God. <sup>12</sup> They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that doeth good, no, not one.

**Ecclesiastes 7:20** – For there is not a just man upon earth, that doeth good, and sinneth not.

**Isaiah 64:6-7** – <sup>6</sup> But we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags; and we all do fade as a leaf; and our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away. <sup>7</sup> And there is none that calleth upon thy name, that stirreth up himself to take hold of thee: for thou hast hid thy face from us, and hast consumed us, because of our iniquities.

**Romans 3:19** – Now we know that what things soever the law saith, it saith to them who are under the law: that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God.

**Romans 3:23** – For all have **sinned**, and come short of the glory of God;

**Psalms 51:5** – Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me.

**Psalms 58:3** – The wicked are estranged from the womb: they go astray as soon as they be born, speaking lies.

**Isaiah 53:6** – All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on him the iniquity of us all.

**Jeremiah 17:9-10** – <sup>9</sup> The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can

know it? <sup>10</sup> I the LORD search the heart, I try the reins, even to give every man according to his ways, and according to the fruit of his doings.

**Revelation 3:17** – Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked:

**1 John 1:8-10** – <sup>8</sup> If we say that we have no **sin**, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. <sup>9</sup> If we confess our **sins**, he is faithful and just to forgive us our **sins**, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. <sup>10</sup> If we say that we have not **sinned**, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.

## Who Do Sinners Serve?

**John 8:34-35** – <sup>34</sup> Jesus answered them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, **Whosoever committeth sin is the servant of sin.** <sup>35</sup> And the servant abideth not in the house for ever: but the Son abideth ever.

**1 John 3:7-10** – <sup>8</sup> **He that committeth sin is of the devil;** for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil. <sup>9</sup> Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God. <sup>10</sup> In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: **whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God,** neither he that loveth not his brother.

## The Enemy of God

**Romans 6:16** – Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?

**Luke 11:23** – He that is not with me is against me: and he that gathereth not with me scattereth.

**James 4:4** – Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God.

## The Penalty For Sin

**John 8:34-35** – <sup>34</sup> Jesus answered them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever committeth sin is the servant of sin. <sup>35</sup> And the servant abideth not in the house for ever: but the Son abideth ever.

**Romans 5:12** – Wherefore, as by one man **sin** entered into the world, and death by **sin**; and so **death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned:**

**Isaiah 1:28** – And the destruction of the transgressors and of the sinners shall be together, and they that forsake the LORD shall be consumed.

**Isaiah 13:9** – Behold, the day of the LORD cometh, cruel both with wrath and fierce anger, to lay the land desolate: and he shall destroy the sinners thereof out of it.

**James 5:20** – Let him know, that he which converteth the sinner from the error of his way shall save a soul from death, and shall hide a multitude of sins.

**Psalms 9:17** – The wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the nations that forget God.

**Luke 12:5** – But I will forewarn you whom ye shall fear: Fear him, which after he hath killed hath power to cast into hell; yea, I say unto you, Fear him.

**Matthew 13:24-30 and 36-43** – <sup>24</sup> Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field: <sup>25</sup> But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares [weeds] among the wheat, and went his way. <sup>26</sup> But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also. <sup>27</sup> So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares? <sup>28</sup> He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up? <sup>29</sup> But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them. <sup>30</sup> Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn....<sup>36</sup> Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house: and his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field. <sup>37</sup> He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man; <sup>38</sup> The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked one; <sup>39</sup> The enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels. <sup>40</sup> As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world. <sup>41</sup> The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity; <sup>42</sup> And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. <sup>43</sup> Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

**2 Thessalonians 1:7-9** – <sup>7</sup> And to you who are troubled rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels, <sup>8</sup> In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ: <sup>9</sup> Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power;

**1 Corinthians 6:9-11** – <sup>9</sup> Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, <sup>10</sup> Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God. <sup>11</sup> And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

**2 Peter 2:10-15** – <sup>10</sup> But chiefly them that walk after the flesh in the lust of uncleanness, and despise government. Presumptuous are they, selfwilled, they are not afraid to speak evil of dignities. <sup>11</sup> Whereas angels, which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation against them before the Lord. <sup>12</sup> But these, as natural brute beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of the things that they understand not; and shall utterly perish in their own corruption; <sup>13</sup> And shall receive the reward of unrighteousness, as they that count it pleasure to riot in the day time. Spots they are and blemishes, sporting themselves with their own deceivings while they feast with you; <sup>14</sup> Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from sin; beguiling unstable souls: an heart they have exercised with covetous practices; cursed children: <sup>15</sup> Which have forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of Balaam the son of Bosor, who loved the wages of unrighteousness;

**1 Corinthians 3:16-17** – <sup>16</sup> Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? <sup>17</sup> If any man defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God

is holy, which temple ye are.

## Is There A Solution To Our Sin Problem?

**John 8:31-32** – <sup>31</sup> Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed; <sup>32</sup> And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.

**John 8:36** – If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.

**1 Timothy 1:15** – This is a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptation, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners; of whom I am chief.

**Romans 3:23-26** – <sup>23</sup> For all have **sinned**, and come short of the glory of God; <sup>24</sup> Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus: <sup>25</sup> Whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God; <sup>26</sup> To declare, I say, at this time his righteousness: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus.

## Shall The Righteous Continue In Sin?

**Romans 6:1-6** – <sup>1</sup> What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound? <sup>2</sup> God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein? <sup>3</sup> Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? <sup>4</sup> Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. <sup>5</sup> For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection: <sup>6</sup> Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.

**Romans 6:13** – Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God.

**Romans 7:7-13** – <sup>7</sup> What shall we say then? Is the law **sin**? God forbid. Nay, I had not known **sin**, but by the law: for I had not known lust, except the law had said, Thou shalt not covet. <sup>8</sup> But **sin**, taking occasion by the commandment, wrought in me all manner of concupiscence. For without the law **sin** was dead. <sup>9</sup> For I was alive without the law once: but when the commandment came, **sin** revived, and I died. <sup>10</sup> And the commandment, which was ordained to life, I found to be unto death. <sup>11</sup> For **sin**, taking occasion by the commandment, deceived me, and by it slew me. <sup>12</sup> Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good. <sup>13</sup> Was then that which is good made death unto me? God forbid. But **sin**, that it might appear **sin**, working death in me by that which is good; that **sin** by the commandment might become exceeding sinful.

**Hebrews 10:26-29** – <sup>26</sup> For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins, <sup>27</sup> But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries. <sup>28</sup> He that despised Moses' law died without mercy under two or three witnesses: <sup>29</sup> Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought

worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace?

## Our Inability To Overcome Sin In Our Own Strength

**Ephesians 2:3** – <sup>3</sup> Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were **by nature the children of wrath**, even as others.

**Romans 7:14-23** – <sup>14</sup> For we know that the law is spiritual: but **I am carnal, sold under sin.** <sup>15</sup> For that which I do I allow not: for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I. <sup>16</sup> If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto the law that it is good. <sup>17</sup> Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. <sup>18</sup> **For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing:** for to will is present with me; but **how to perform that which is good I find not.** <sup>19</sup> For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do. <sup>20</sup> Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. <sup>21</sup> I find then a law, that, when I would do good, evil is present with me. <sup>22</sup> For I delight in the law of God after the inward man: <sup>23</sup> But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members.

## Overcoming Sin

**Titus 3:3-7** – <sup>3</sup> For we ourselves also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving divers lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful, and hating one another. <sup>4</sup> But after that the kindness and love of God our Saviour toward man appeared, <sup>5</sup> **Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us**, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost; <sup>6</sup> Which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour; <sup>7</sup> That being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life.

**Ephesians 2:8** – <sup>8</sup> For **by grace are ye saved through faith**; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: <sup>9</sup> Not of works [our own effort], lest any man should boast.

**1 John 1:9** – <sup>9</sup> **If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins**, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

**1 John 2:1-2** – <sup>1</sup> My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous: <sup>2</sup> And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world.

**Matthew 26:27-28** – <sup>27</sup> And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it; <sup>28</sup> For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins.

**Romans 3:24-28** – <sup>24</sup> **Being justified freely by his grace** through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus: <sup>25</sup> Whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God; <sup>26</sup> To declare, I say, at this time his righteousness: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in

Jesus. <sup>27</sup> Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay: but by the law of faith. <sup>28</sup> Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law.

**1 John 1:5-7** – <sup>5</sup> This then is the message which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in him is no darkness at all. <sup>6</sup> If we say that we have fellowship with him, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the truth: <sup>7</sup> But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and **the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.**

**Revelation 1:5-6** – <sup>5</sup> And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. **Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood,** <sup>6</sup> And hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

**Romans 8:1-15** – <sup>1</sup> There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. <sup>2</sup> For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death. <sup>3</sup> For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh: <sup>4</sup> That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. <sup>5</sup> For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit. <sup>6</sup> For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. <sup>7</sup> Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. <sup>8</sup> So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. <sup>9</sup> But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.

<sup>10</sup> And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin; but the Spirit is life because of righteousness. <sup>11</sup> But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you. <sup>12</sup> Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh. <sup>13</sup> For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live. <sup>14</sup> For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God. <sup>15</sup> For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father. <sup>16</sup> The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God: <sup>17</sup> And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together.

**1 Timothy 5:22** – <sup>22</sup> Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither be partaker of other men's sins: keep thyself pure.

**1 Peter 4:8** – <sup>8</sup> And above all things have fervent charity among yourselves: for charity shall cover the multitude of sins.

**Psalms 119:1-3** – <sup>1</sup> ALEPH. Blessed are the undefiled in the way, who walk in the law of the LORD. <sup>2</sup> Blessed are they that keep his testimonies, and that seek him with the whole heart. <sup>3</sup> They also do no iniquity: they walk in his ways.

## Overcoming Evil

**James 4:7-10** – <sup>7</sup> Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you. <sup>8</sup> Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you. Cleanse your hands, ye sinners; and purify your hearts, ye double minded. <sup>9</sup> Be afflicted, and mourn, and weep: let your laughter be turned to mourning, and your joy to heaviness. <sup>10</sup> Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and he shall lift you up.

## Summary

Sin is the breaking of God's law. God's law will never end. God's law is holy and good. The purpose of God's law is to show that we are sinners and therefore in need of the saving grace of Jesus Christ.

Sin originated in heaven when Lucifer rebelled against God. Eve sinned after being deceived by Lucifer in the Garden of Eden. Adam willingly sinned after his wife sinned. All members of the human race have been sinners ever since. Everyone has sinned.

When we sin, we serve Lucifer (Satan). Sinners are also the enemy of God. God loves sinners but the sinners are opposed to God and His purposes. The penalty for sinning is eternal death.

There is only one solution for sin. That solution is the saving grace of Jesus Christ. We can do nothing to pay the debt for our sins. Only the righteousness of Christ can save us.

Although we can not earn righteousness. We should not continue to sin. Our changed lives are evidence that we have been saved. The apostle Paul writes: "if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins, But a certain fearful looking for of judgment." Paul was speaking of an unrepented sinner who lives a life of sin. This is the person who doesn't want to change.

Sin is our natural desire. We have a sin nature. We cannot overcome sin in our own strength; we are not capable. A Leopard cannot change its spots. A Tiger cannot erase its stripes. And we can't change our sin nature. Only through God's Holy Spirit living in us can we begin to change.

We can not overcome sin through our own efforts. We are saved by grace through faith in Jesus Christ. It is a free gift. Our contribution is to submit to God's desire to save us. And to allow His Holy Spirit to work His will in us and through us.



# #4

## God's Law

There are hundreds of laws in the Old Testament. These laws come from God. These laws deal with health, sanitation, money, farming, courts, religious ceremonial laws and many others. There is not room to list them all here. The most important of the laws of the Old Testament were the Ten Commandments; these are listed below. Anyone who has failed to perfectly obey God's law has sinned. There are terrible eternal consequences for breaking God's law; the consequences are eternal death. But there is a remedy to our sinful condition. This remedy is Salvation through Jesus Christ.

### The Character of God's Law

**Nehemiah 9:13** – Thou camest down also upon mount Sinai, and spakest with them from heaven, and gavest them right judgments, and true laws, good statutes and commandments:

**Proverbs 4:2** – For I give you good doctrine, forsake ye not my law.

**Joshua 9:8** – This book of the law shall not depart out of thy mouth; but thou shalt meditate therein day and night, that thou mayest observe to do according to all that is written therein: for then thou shalt make thy way prosperous, and then thou shalt have good success.

**Psalms 19:7-8** – <sup>7</sup> The law of the LORD is perfect, converting the soul: the testimony of the LORD is sure, making wise the simple. <sup>8</sup> The statutes of the LORD are right, rejoicing the heart: the commandment of the LORD is pure, enlightening the eyes.

**Psalms 119:151** – Thou art near, O LORD; and all thy commandments are truth.

**Romans 7:12** – Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good.

**1 Timothy 1:8** – But we know that the law is good, if a man use it lawfully;

### The Purpose of God's Law

**Romans 3:20** – Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin.

**Romans 7:7** – What shall we say then? Is the law sin? God forbid. Nay, I had not known sin, but by the law: for I had not known lust, except the law had said, Thou shalt not covet.

**1 Timothy 1:9-11** – <sup>9</sup> Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers, <sup>10</sup> For whoremongers, for them that defile themselves with mankind, for menstealers, for liars, for perjured persons, and if there be any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine; <sup>11</sup> According to the glorious gospel of the blessed God, which was committed to my trust.

**Galatians 3:24-25** – Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith.

## When Will God's Law End?

**Matthew 5:17-19** – [Jesus said:] Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. <sup>18</sup> For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. <sup>19</sup> Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven.

**Malachi 3:6** – For I am the LORD, I change not;...

**Hebrews 13:8** – Jesus Christ the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever.

## God's Law

**Exodus 20:1-17** – [The Ten Commandments] <sup>1</sup> And God spake all these words, saying, <sup>2</sup> I am the LORD thy God, which have brought thee out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage. <sup>3</sup> Thou shalt have no other gods before me. <sup>4</sup> Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth: <sup>5</sup> Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the LORD thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me; <sup>6</sup> And shewing mercy unto thousands of them that love me, and keep my commandments. <sup>7</sup> Thou shalt not take the name of the LORD thy God in vain; for the LORD will not hold him guiltless that taketh his name in vain. <sup>8</sup> Remember the sabbath day, to keep it holy. <sup>9</sup> Six days shalt thou labour, and do all thy work: <sup>10</sup> But the seventh day is the sabbath of the LORD thy God: in it thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates: <sup>11</sup> For in six days the LORD made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the LORD blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it. <sup>12</sup> Honour thy father and thy mother: that thy days may be long upon the land which the LORD thy God giveth thee. <sup>13</sup> Thou shalt not kill. <sup>14</sup> Thou shalt not commit adultery. <sup>15</sup> Thou shalt not steal. <sup>16</sup> Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbour. <sup>17</sup> Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's house, thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's wife, nor his manservant, nor his maidservant, nor his ox, nor his ass, nor any thing that is thy neighbour's.

**John 13:34-35** – <sup>34</sup> A new [additional] commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. <sup>35</sup> By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.

**Matthew 7:12-14** – <sup>12</sup> Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets. <sup>13</sup> Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: <sup>14</sup>

Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.

**Matthew 22:35-40** – <sup>36</sup> Master, which is the great commandment in the law? <sup>37</sup> Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. <sup>38</sup> This is the first and great commandment. <sup>39</sup> And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. <sup>40</sup> On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.

**Matthew 5:27-28** – <sup>27</sup> Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: <sup>28</sup> But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.

**Matthew 10:24** – And the disciples were astonished at his words. But Jesus answereth again, and saith unto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches to enter into the kingdom of God!

## Summary

Sin is the breaking of God's law. God's law is much more than just the Ten Commandments. According to God's law, we must obey Him in all things. God has a purpose for each of us. If we don't achieve God's purpose for our life, we have sinned. If we don't use our money in accordance with God's will, we have sinned. If we dwell on sinful thoughts, we have sinned. There is a penalty for sin which is death. Because of sin and its penalty, we are need of the salvation.

## #5

# Salvation – What Is It?

Salvation means to be saved. But who is saving us? What are we being saved from? And why do we need to be saved?

## Salvation

**John 3:16-18** – <sup>16</sup> For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. <sup>17</sup> For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. <sup>18</sup> He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.

**Matthew 1:21** – <sup>21</sup> And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.

**Matthew 18:11** – <sup>11</sup> For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost.

**1 Timothy 1:15-16** – <sup>15</sup> This is a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptance, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners; of whom I am chief. <sup>16</sup> Howbeit for this cause I obtained mercy, that in me first Jesus Christ might shew forth all longsuffering, for a pattern to them which should hereafter believe on him to life everlasting.

**Acts 4:10-12** – <sup>10</sup> Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised from the dead, even by him doth this man stand here before you whole. <sup>11</sup> This is the stone which was set at nought of you builders, which is become the head of the corner. <sup>12</sup> Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.

**1 Thessalonians 5:9** – <sup>9</sup> For God hath not appointed us to wrath, but to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ, <sup>10</sup> Who died for us, that, whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with him.

**Hebrews 5:8-9** – <sup>8</sup> Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered; <sup>9</sup> And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him;

**Titus 2:11-14** – <sup>11</sup> For the grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men, <sup>12</sup> Teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world; <sup>13</sup> Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ; <sup>14</sup> Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

## All have Sinned And Are In Need Of Salvation

**Romans 3:23-26** – <sup>23</sup> For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God; <sup>24</sup> Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus: <sup>25</sup> Whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God; <sup>26</sup> To declare, I say, at this time his righteousness: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus.

**1 John 1:8-10** – <sup>8</sup> If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. <sup>9</sup> If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. <sup>10</sup> If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.

## The Penalty For Sin

**Ezekiel 18:4** – Behold, all souls are mine; as the soul of the father, so also the soul of the son is mine: the soul that sinneth, it shall die.

**Ezekiel 18:20** – <sup>20</sup> The soul that sinneth, it shall die. The son shall not bear the iniquity of the father, neither shall the father bear the iniquity of the son: the righteousness of the righteous shall be upon him, and the wickedness of the wicked shall be upon him.

**Romans 5:11-12** – <sup>12</sup> Wherefore, as by one man **sin** entered into the world, and death by **sin**; and so **death passed upon all men**, for that all have sinned:

**Psalms 9:17** – The wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the nations that forget God.

**1 Corinthians 6:9-10** – <sup>9</sup> Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, <sup>10</sup> Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.

## Jesus Our Saviour

**Luke 19:10** – For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost.

**Matthew 1:21** – <sup>21</sup> And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.

**2 Corinthians 5:18, 19, 21** – <sup>18</sup> And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation; <sup>19</sup> To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation.... <sup>21</sup> For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.

**Galatians 3:13** – Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree:

**Titus 2:11-14** – <sup>11</sup> For the grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men, <sup>12</sup>

Teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world; <sup>13</sup> Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ; <sup>14</sup> Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

**Ephesians 1:3-7** – <sup>3</sup> Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ: <sup>4</sup> According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: <sup>5</sup> Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, <sup>6</sup> To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved. <sup>7</sup> In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace;

**1 Corinthians 15:3-4** – <sup>3</sup> For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures; <sup>4</sup> And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures:

## The Blood of Christ

**1 John 1:7** – But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.

**Matthew 26:27-28** – <sup>27</sup> And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it; <sup>28</sup> For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins. (see also Mark 14:24 and Luke 22:20)

**Romans 5:8-10** – <sup>8</sup> But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us. <sup>9</sup> Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him. <sup>10</sup> For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life.

**Colossians 1:12-14** – <sup>12</sup> Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light: <sup>13</sup> Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son: <sup>14</sup> In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins:

**Revelation 1:5-6** – <sup>5</sup> And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood, <sup>6</sup> And hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

**Hebrews 9:22** – And almost all things are by the law purged with blood; and without shedding of blood is no remission.

## The Work of The Holy Spirit

**John 6:44** – No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day.

**2 Corinthians 4:7** – But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of us.

**1 Corinthians 2:13-16** – <sup>13</sup> Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual. <sup>14</sup> But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned. <sup>15</sup> But he that is spiritual judgeth all things, yet he himself is judged of no man. <sup>16</sup> For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct him? But we have the mind of Christ.

**Romans 8:7-9** – <sup>7</sup> Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. <sup>8</sup> So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. <sup>9</sup> But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.

**Ezekiel 36:26-27** – <sup>26</sup> A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh. <sup>27</sup> And I will put my spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and ye shall keep my judgments, and do them.

## Summary

Salvation is the method by which God saves sinful humans from the eternal damnation (eternal death) which in the consequence of sin. God has done this because of His great love for us. God give's salvation through His son Jesus Christ. The whole world is in need of Salvation because all have sinned. The penalty for sin is death. Jesus has saved us through his own death and resurrection.

Because of our sinful nature, we have no desire for God, His Law or any of the things of God. It is the work of the Holy Spirit that changes a persons heart and turns them towards God and Jesus Christ. The Holy Spirit gives us understanding of God's word, understanding of our need of salvation and also the desire and ability walk in the ways of God.

## #6

# Salvation – How Do We Obtain It?

As the text below demonstrate, accepting Jesus Christ as Lord and savior is the first step in obtaining salvation. Should a person die shortly after accepting Jesus Christ as their Lord and savior, they would be saved. For those not faced with immediate death, there are several steps that we must take in order to claim our salvation.

## Saved By Grace – A Free Gift

**Ephesians 2:8-9** – <sup>8</sup> For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: **it is the gift of God:** <sup>9</sup> Not of works, lest any man should boast.

**Titus 3:4-7** – <sup>4</sup> But after that the kindness and love of God our Saviour toward man appeared, <sup>5</sup> **Not by works of righteousness** which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost; <sup>6</sup> Which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour; <sup>7</sup> That being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life.

**Romans 3:26-28** – <sup>26</sup> To declare, I say, at this time his righteousness: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus. <sup>27</sup> Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay: but by the law of faith. <sup>28</sup> Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law.

**Galatians 2:16** – <sup>16</sup> Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for **by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.**

**Galatians 3:10-12** - <sup>10</sup> For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them. <sup>11</sup> But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: for, **The just shall live by faith.** <sup>12</sup> And the law is not of faith: but, The man that doeth them shall live in them.

## Believe On The Lord

**John 11:25-26** – <sup>25</sup> Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: <sup>26</sup> And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believest thou this?

**Acts 16:30-31** – <sup>30</sup> And brought them out, and said, Sirs, what must I do to be saved? <sup>31</sup> And they said, Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house.

**Mark 1:15** – And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye, and believe the gospel.



**John 1:12** – But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name:

**John 14:1-3** – <sup>1</sup> Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me. <sup>2</sup> In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. <sup>3</sup> And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also.

**John 16:27** – For the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from God.

**James 2:23** – And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called the Friend of God.

## Accept Jesus As Lord And Savior

**1 Timothy 1:15** – This is a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptation, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners; of whom I am chief.

**Romans 6:23** – For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

**1 John 4:9-10** – <sup>9</sup> In this was manifested the love of God toward us, because that God sent his only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through him. <sup>10</sup> Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son to be the propitiation for our sins.

**John 1:12-13** – <sup>12</sup> But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: <sup>13</sup> Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

**1 John 5:10-13** – <sup>10</sup> He that believeth on the Son of God hath the witness in himself: he that believeth not God hath made him a liar; because he believeth not the record that God gave of his Son. <sup>11</sup> And this is the record, that God hath given to us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. <sup>12</sup> He that hath the Son hath life; and he that hath not the Son of God hath not life. <sup>13</sup> These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God; that ye may know that ye have eternal life, and that ye may believe on the name of the Son of God.

**John 5:23-29** – <sup>24</sup> Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life. <sup>25</sup> Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live. <sup>26</sup> For as the Father hath life in himself; so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself; <sup>27</sup> And hath given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man. <sup>28</sup> Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, <sup>29</sup> And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.

## Be Converted

**Matthew 18:3** – And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven.

## Confess Christ Before Men

**Luke 12:8-9** – <sup>8</sup> Also I say unto you, Whosoever shall confess me before men, him shall the Son of man also confess before the angels of God: <sup>9</sup> But he that denieth me before men shall be denied before the angels of God.

**Matthew 10:32-33** – <sup>32</sup> Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heaven. <sup>33</sup> But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven.

**Romans 10:9-11** – <sup>9</sup> That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. <sup>10</sup> For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation. <sup>11</sup> For the scripture saith, Whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed.

**Philippians 2:11** – And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

**1 John 4:14-16** – <sup>14</sup> And we have seen and do testify that the Father sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world. <sup>15</sup> Whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God. <sup>16</sup> And we have known and believed the love that God hath to us. God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him.

## Faith

**Ephesians 2:8** – For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God:

**Luke 7:50** – And he said to the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace.

**1 Peter 1:3-5** – <sup>3</sup> Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercy hath begotten us again unto a lively hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, <sup>4</sup> To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you, <sup>5</sup> Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.

## Confession

**1 John 1:9-10** – <sup>9</sup> If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. <sup>10</sup> If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.

## Repentance

**Matthew 4:17** – From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.

**Matthew 9:11-13** – <sup>12</sup> But when Jesus heard that, he said unto them, They that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick. <sup>13</sup> But go ye and learn what that meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

**Luke 13:3** – I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

**Matthew 11:20-24** – <sup>20</sup> Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they repented not: <sup>21</sup> Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works, which were done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes. <sup>22</sup> But I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgment, than for you. <sup>23</sup> And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works, which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day. <sup>24</sup> But I say unto you, That it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment, than for thee.

**Luke 15:7** – I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance.

**Luke 24:36 & 46-49** – <sup>36</sup> And as they thus spake, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you.... <sup>46</sup> And said unto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day: <sup>47</sup> And that **repentance** and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. <sup>48</sup> And ye are witnesses of these things. <sup>49</sup> And, behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high

## Forgiveness of Others

**Luke 6:37** – Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven:

**Ephesians 4:32** – And be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you.

**Matthew 11:25-26** – <sup>25</sup> And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have ought against any: that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses. <sup>26</sup> But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.

## Baptism

**John 3:3-7** – <sup>3</sup> Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. <sup>4</sup> Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born

when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born? <sup>5</sup> Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. <sup>6</sup> That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. <sup>7</sup> Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again.

**Matthew 28:19-20** – <sup>19</sup> Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: <sup>20</sup> Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen.

**Mark 16:15-16** – <sup>15</sup> And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. <sup>16</sup> He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned.

**Acts 2:38-41** – <sup>38</sup> Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost. <sup>39</sup> For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call. <sup>40</sup> And with many other words did he testify and exhort, saying, Save yourselves from this untoward generation. <sup>41</sup> Then they that gladly received his word were baptized: and the same day there were added unto them about three thousand souls.

**Acts 22:12-16** – <sup>12</sup> And one Ananias, a devout man according to the law, having a good report of all the Jews which dwelt there, <sup>13</sup> Came unto me, and stood, and said unto me, Brother Saul, receive thy sight. And the same hour I looked up upon him. <sup>14</sup> And he said, The God of our fathers hath chosen thee, that thou shouldest know his will, and see that Just One, and shouldest hear the voice of his mouth. <sup>15</sup> For thou shalt be his witness unto all men of what thou hast seen and heard. <sup>16</sup> And now why tarriest thou? arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sins, calling on the name of the Lord.

## A Changed Life

**2 Corinthians 5:17** – Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.

**Romans 6: 1-6** – <sup>1</sup> What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound? <sup>2</sup> God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein? <sup>3</sup> Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? <sup>4</sup> Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. <sup>5</sup> For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection: <sup>6</sup> Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.

**Romans 7:14-25** – <sup>14</sup> For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin. <sup>15</sup> For that which I do I allow not: for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I. <sup>16</sup> If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto the law that it is good. <sup>17</sup> Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. <sup>18</sup> For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not. <sup>19</sup> For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do. <sup>20</sup> Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do

it, but sin that dwelleth in me. <sup>21</sup> I find then a law, that, when I would do good, evil is present with me. <sup>22</sup> For I delight in the law of God after the inward man: <sup>23</sup> But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members. <sup>24</sup> O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death? <sup>25</sup> I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin.

**Ezekiel 18:21-22** – <sup>21</sup> But if the wicked will turn from all his sins that he hath committed, and keep all my statutes, and do that which is lawful and right, he shall surely live, he shall not die. <sup>22</sup> All his transgressions that he hath committed, they shall not be mentioned unto him: in his righteousness that he hath done he shall live.

**2 Chronicles 7:14** – If my people, which are called by my name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek my face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land.

**John 14:15** – If ye love me, keep my commandments.

**Hebrews 5:8-9** – <sup>8</sup> Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered; <sup>9</sup> And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him;

**Romans 6:7-10** – <sup>7</sup> For he that is dead is freed from sin. <sup>8</sup> Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him: <sup>9</sup> Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more; death hath no more dominion over him. <sup>10</sup> For in that he died, he died unto sin once: but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God.

**Philippians 1:6** – Being confident of this very thing, that he which hath begun a good work in you will perform it until the day of Jesus Christ:

**Matthew 16:24-26** – <sup>24</sup> Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. <sup>25</sup> For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it. <sup>26</sup> For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

**Luke 9:23** – <sup>23</sup> And he said to them all, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and **take up his cross daily**, and follow me.

**Romans 6:4-5** – <sup>4</sup> Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. <sup>5</sup> For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection:

**Romans 6:13** – <sup>13</sup> Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God.

**Romans 6:16** – <sup>16</sup> Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?

## The Spirit vs. The Flesh

**Romans 8:7-9** – <sup>6</sup> For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. <sup>7</sup> Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. <sup>8</sup> So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. <sup>9</sup> But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.

## How To Resist And Overcome Evil

**Philippians 2:13** – For it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure.

**Hebrews 10:16-17** – <sup>16</sup> This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord, I will put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them; <sup>17</sup> And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more.

**James 4:7-8** – <sup>7</sup> Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you. <sup>8</sup> Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you. Cleanse your hands, ye sinners; and purify your hearts, ye double minded.

**Romans 7:24-25** – <sup>24</sup> O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death? <sup>25</sup> I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin.

**Galatians 2:20** – I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.

**John 3:8** – The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit.

**Romans 8:13-14** – <sup>13</sup> For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live. <sup>14</sup> For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.

**Romans 5:5** – And hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us.

## Forgiveness For Our Failures

**1 John 2:1-2** – <sup>1</sup> My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous: <sup>2</sup> And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world.

**1 John 1:9** – If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

## How Big Is God's Forgiveness

**1 Peter 4:10** – <sup>10</sup> As every man hath received the gift, even so minister the same one to another, as good stewards of the **manifold grace of God**.

**2 Corinthians 12:9** – <sup>9</sup> And he said unto me, **My grace is sufficient for thee**: for my strength is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me.

**Romans 5:20** – <sup>20</sup> Moreover the law entered, that the offence might abound. But **where sin abounded, grace did much more abound**: <sup>21</sup> That as sin hath reigned unto death, even so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life by Jesus Christ our Lord.

## How Many Will Be Saved?

**Matthew 7:13-14** – <sup>13</sup> Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: <sup>14</sup> Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.

## A Description of God's Faithful

**John 10:27-29** – <sup>27</sup> **My sheep hear my voice**, and I know them, and **they follow me**: <sup>28</sup> And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand. <sup>29</sup> My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand.

**Romans 12:1-2** – <sup>1</sup> I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye **present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God**, which is your reasonable service. <sup>2</sup> And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.

**Romans 8:14** – <sup>14</sup> For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.

**Revelation 14:12** – Here is the patience of the saints: here are **they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus**.

**Hebrews 12:14** – <sup>14</sup> **Follow peace with all men, and holiness**, without which no man shall see the Lord:

**2 Corinthians 5:7** – <sup>7</sup> (For we walk by faith, not by sight:)

**Roman 1:17** – <sup>17</sup> For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, **The just shall live by faith**.

**1 John 5:1-2** – <sup>1</sup> Whosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ is born of God: and every one that loveth him that begat loveth him also that is begotten of him. <sup>2</sup> By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God, and keep his commandments.

**Galatians 5:22-26** – <sup>22</sup> But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, <sup>23</sup> Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law. <sup>24</sup> And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts. <sup>25</sup> If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit. <sup>26</sup> Let us not be desirous of vain glory, provoking one another, envying one another.

**2 Peter 1:5-8** – <sup>5</sup> And beside this, giving all diligence, add to your faith virtue; and to virtue knowledge; <sup>6</sup> And to knowledge temperance; and to temperance patience; and to patience godliness; <sup>7</sup> And to godliness brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness charity. <sup>8</sup> For if these things be in you, and abound, they make you that ye shall neither be barren nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ.

**2 Timothy 1:7** – <sup>7</sup> For God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind.

## A Description of The Lost

**Philippians 3:18-19** – <sup>18</sup> (For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the cross of Christ: <sup>19</sup> Whose end is destruction, whose God is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things.)

**Romans 2:8-9** – <sup>8</sup> But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation and wrath, <sup>9</sup> Tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that doeth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile;

**1 Corinthians 6:9** – <sup>9</sup> Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, <sup>10</sup> Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.

**Romans 9:30-33** – <sup>30</sup> What shall we say then? That the Gentiles, which followed not after righteousness, have attained to righteousness, even the righteousness which is of faith. <sup>31</sup> But Israel, which followed after the law of righteousness, hath not attained to the law of righteousness. <sup>32</sup> Wherefore? **Because they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law.** For they stumbled at that stumblingstone; <sup>33</sup> As it is written, Behold, I lay in Sion a stumblingstone and rock of offence: and whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed.

**John 3:19-20** – <sup>19</sup> And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and **men loved darkness rather than light**, because **their deeds were evil.** <sup>20</sup> For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved.

**2 Thessalonians 1:7-8** – <sup>7</sup> And to you who are troubled rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels, <sup>8</sup> In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that **know not God, and that obey not the gospel** of our Lord Jesus Christ:

**Romans 1:29-32** – <sup>29</sup> Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, <sup>30</sup> Backbiters, haters of God, spiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, <sup>31</sup> Without understanding,



covenantbreakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful: <sup>32</sup> Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them.

## There Are Unsaved Fake Christians

**Mathew 7:21-23** – <sup>21</sup> Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. <sup>22</sup> Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? <sup>23</sup> And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.

**Revelation 3:15-17** – <sup>15</sup> I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot. <sup>16</sup> So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth. <sup>17</sup> Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked:

**Titus 1:16** – <sup>16</sup> They profess that they know God; but in works they deny him, being abominable, and disobedient, and unto every good work reprobate.

**Romans 16:17-18** – <sup>17</sup> Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them. <sup>18</sup> For they that are such serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly; and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple.

**Romans 1:18-32** – <sup>18</sup> For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness; <sup>19</sup> Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God hath shewed it unto them. <sup>20</sup> For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse: <sup>21</sup> Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. <sup>22</sup> Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, <sup>23</sup> And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things. <sup>24</sup> Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves: <sup>25</sup> Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen. <sup>26</sup> For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature: <sup>27</sup> And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompence of their error which was meet. <sup>28</sup> And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient; <sup>29</sup> Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, <sup>30</sup> Backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, <sup>31</sup> Without understanding, covenantbreakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful: <sup>32</sup> Who knowing

the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them.

## The Antichrist

**2 John 1:7** – For many deceivers are entered into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist.

## Summary

We are saved by grace through faith in Jesus Christ, it is a free gift. A person can win the lottery and never see any money. After having won, there are steps to take in order to gain the prize. Likewise, the word of God instructs us to take certain steps in order to receive the free gift of salvation through Jesus Christ.

1. We must believe on the Lord Jesus Christ is the son of God and our Saviour.
2. We must accept Jesus Christ as our Lord and Saviour.
3. We must be converted, our heart must be changed.
4. We must confess Jesus Christ before others.
5. We must acknowledge that we are saved by faith and we must have faith and carry out that faith in our lives through our actions.
6. We must confess our sins.
7. We must repent of our sins which means to turn from sin and change our sinful ways.
8. We must forgive others.
9. We must be baptized.
10. We must receive God's Holy Spirit.

None of the above is accomplished on our own accord. We can't even accept Jesus on our own. Jesus said: "No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day." (John 6:44) Jesus also said: "Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him..." (Revelation 3:20)

God's loving grace is all sufficient. However great our sin, His grace is greater.

The Father in heaven is calling us to His son Jesus Christ. If we open the door, Jesus will come in. The Holy Spirit of God will give us the power to accomplish the above 10 steps and much more. It is not us that does it but God living in us through His Holy Spirit. The Apostle Paul writes: "For it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure." (Philippians 2:13) The most important thing that God desires to work in you is your salvation through Jesus Christ.

Once you have received Salvation and God's Holy Spirit, it will be evidenced by your changed life. This doesn't mean you are perfect but you must have a desire to be perfect and you must love God's law. God's children hear his voice and know him; they are guided by His Holy Spirit and they do His will; they are holy, temperate and loving; they keep God's commandments and they walk by faith.

The lost don't know God. They are evil and don't like or keep God's law. They love their wicked

ways and don't seek after God.

False Christians do not do God's will; they do their own pleasure. They say they know him but they don't. Neither do they obey Him. They like to change, twist or interpret God's word in order to make it fit their own desires.

# # 7

## Faith

The term Faith is used loosely in the world today. People place faith in their government, faith in themselves, faith in others and faith in all different kinds of religions. But is this what the Bible is talking about when it speaks of faith? Faith is very important to Christianity and to Salvation. Therefore, lets look at what the Bible has to say about Faith.

### What Is Faith?

**Galatians 5:22** – <sup>22</sup> But **the fruit of the Spirit** is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, **faith**,

**Ephesians 2:8** – <sup>8</sup> For by grace are ye saved through **faith**; and that not of yourselves: **it is the gift of God**:

**John 6:29** – <sup>29</sup> Jesus answered and said unto them, **This is the work of God, that ye believe on [have faith in] him whom he hath sent.** (Words in brackets added for clarification.)

**Hebrews 11:1-3** – <sup>1</sup> Now **faith** is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen. <sup>2</sup> For by it the elders obtained a good report. <sup>3</sup> Through **faith** we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear.

**2 Corinthians 5:7** – (For we walk by **faith**, not by sight:)

### How Do We Get Faith?

**John 20:30-31** – <sup>30</sup> And many other signs truly did Jesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book: <sup>31</sup> But **these are written, that ye might believe [have faith] that Jesus is the Christ**, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through his name. (Words in brackets added for clarification.)

**Romans 10:17** – So then **faith** cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.

**John 17:20** – <sup>20</sup> Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which **shall believe [have faith]** on me **through their word [preaching or witnessing]**; (Words in brackets added for clarification.)

**Acts 15:7** – <sup>7</sup> And when there had been much disputing, Peter rose up, and said unto them, Men and brethren, ye know how that a good while ago God made choice among us, that **the Gentiles by my mouth should hear the word of the gospel, and believe [have faith]**.

**Romans 12:3** – For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think; but to think soberly, according as **God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith**.

**Hebrews 12:2** – Looking unto **Jesus the author and finisher of our faith**; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the

throne of God.

**Matthew 17:14-21** – <sup>14</sup> And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a certain man, kneeling down to him, and saying, <sup>15</sup> Lord, have mercy on my son: for he is lunatick, and sore vexed: for oftentimes he falleth into the fire, and oft into the water. <sup>16</sup> And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not cure him. <sup>17</sup> Then Jesus answered and said, O **faithless** and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him hither to me. <sup>18</sup> And Jesus rebuked the devil; and he departed out of him: and the child was cured from that very hour. <sup>19</sup> Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out? <sup>20</sup> And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, If ye have **faith** as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you. <sup>21</sup> Howbeit this kind goeth not out but by **prayer** and **fasting**.

**Luke 11:9-13** – <sup>9</sup> And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you. <sup>10</sup> For **every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened**. <sup>11</sup> If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? or if he ask a fish, will he for a fish give him a serpent? <sup>12</sup> Or if he shall ask an egg, will he offer<sup>c</sup> him a scorpion? <sup>13</sup> If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?

## Faith Pleases God

**Hebrews 11:6** – But without **faith** it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.

**Hebrews 10:38** – Now the just shall live by **faith**: but if any man draw back, my soul shall have no pleasure in him.

## Salvation Comes Through Faith

**Ephesians 2:8-9** – <sup>8</sup> For by grace are ye saved through **faith**; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: <sup>9</sup> Not of works, lest any man should boast.

**Romans 5:1-2** – <sup>1</sup> Therefore being justified by **faith**, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ: <sup>2</sup> By whom also we have access by **faith** into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God.

**Galatians 3:26** – For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus.

**2 Timothy 3:14-15** – <sup>14</sup> But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned and hast been assured of, knowing of whom thou hast learned them; <sup>15</sup> And that from a child thou hast known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation through **faith** which is in Christ Jesus.

**Romans 3:22-27** – <sup>22</sup> Even the righteousness of God which is by **faith** of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference: <sup>23</sup> For all have sinned, and come short of the

glory of God; <sup>24</sup> Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus: <sup>25</sup> Whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through **faith** in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God; <sup>26</sup> To declare, I say, at this time his righteousness: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus. <sup>27</sup> Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay: but by the law of **faith**.

## The Power of Faith

**Luke 18:41-43** – <sup>42</sup> And Jesus said unto him, Receive thy sight: thy **faith** hath saved thee. <sup>43</sup> And immediately he received his sight, and followed him, glorifying God: and all the people, when they saw it, gave praise unto God.

**Luke 7:50** – And he said to the woman, Thy **faith** hath saved thee; go in peace.

**James 5:15** – And the prayer of **faith** shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him.

**Matthew 9:27-29** – <sup>27</sup> And when Jesus departed thence, two blind men followed him, crying, and saying, Thou Son of David, have mercy on us. <sup>28</sup> And when he was come into the house, the blind men came to him: and Jesus saith unto them, Believe ye that I am able to do this? They said unto him, Yea, Lord. <sup>29</sup> Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it unto you.

**Matthew 21:19-22** – <sup>19</sup> And when he saw a fig tree in the way, he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but leaves only, and said unto it, Let no fruit grow on thee henceforward for ever. And presently the fig tree withered away. <sup>20</sup> And when the disciples saw it, they marvelled, saying, How soon is the fig tree withered away! <sup>21</sup> Jesus answered and said unto them, Verily I say unto you, If ye have **faith**, and doubt not, ye shall not only do this which is done to the fig tree, but also if ye shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; it shall be done. <sup>22</sup> And all things, whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive.

## Faith Versus Works

**Galatians 2:16** – Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.

**Ephesians 2:8-9** – <sup>8</sup> For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: <sup>9</sup> Not of works, lest any man should boast.

**James 2:14-26** – <sup>14</sup> What doth it profit, my brethren, **though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can faith save him?** <sup>15</sup> If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food, <sup>16</sup> And one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be ye warmed and filled; notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needful to the body; what doth it profit? <sup>17</sup> Even so **faith**, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone. <sup>18</sup> Yea, a man may say, Thou hast **faith**, and I have works: shew me thy **faith** without thy works, and I will shew thee my **faith** by my works. <sup>19</sup> Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble. <sup>20</sup> But wilt thou know, O vain man, that

**faith without works is dead?** <sup>21</sup> Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar? <sup>22</sup> Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect? <sup>23</sup> And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called the Friend of God. <sup>24</sup> Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only. <sup>25</sup> Likewise also was not Rahab the harlot justified by works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent them out another way? <sup>26</sup> For as the body without the spirit is dead, so **faith without works is dead** also.

## Faithful Servants

**Hebrews 11:4-40** – <sup>4</sup> By **faith** Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, by which he obtained witness that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: and by it he being dead yet speaketh. <sup>5</sup> By **faith** Enoch was translated that he should not see death; and was not found, because God had translated him: for before his translation he had this testimony, that he pleased God. <sup>6</sup> But without **faith** it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him. <sup>7</sup> By **faith** Noah, being warned of God of things not seen as yet, moved with fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house; by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousness which is by **faith**. <sup>8</sup> By **faith** Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out, not knowing whither he went. <sup>9</sup> By **faith** he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange country, dwelling in tabernacles with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise: <sup>10</sup> For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God. <sup>11</sup> Through **faith** also Sara herself received strength to conceive seed, and was delivered of a child when she was past age, because she judged him **faithful** who had promised. <sup>12</sup> Therefore sprang there even of one, and him as good as dead, so many as the stars of the sky in multitude, and as the sand which is by the sea shore innumerable. <sup>13</sup> These all died in **faith**, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off, and were persuaded of them, and embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth. <sup>14</sup> For they that say such things declare plainly that they seek a country. <sup>15</sup> And truly, if they had been mindful of that country from whence they came out, they might have had opportunity to have returned. <sup>16</sup> But now they desire a better country, that is, an heavenly: wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God: for he hath prepared for them a city. <sup>17</sup> By **faith** Abraham, when he was tried, offered up Isaac: and he that had received the promises offered up his only begotten son, <sup>18</sup> Of whom it was said, That in Isaac shall thy seed be called: <sup>19</sup> Accounting that God was able to raise him up, even from the dead; from whence also he received him in a figure. <sup>20</sup> By **faith** Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau concerning things to come. <sup>21</sup> By **faith** Jacob, when he was a dying, blessed both the sons of Joseph; and worshipped, leaning upon the top of his staff. <sup>22</sup> By **faith** Joseph, when he died, made mention of the departing of the children of Israel; and gave commandment concerning his bones. <sup>23</sup> By **faith** Moses, when he was born, was hid three months of his parents, because they saw he was a proper child; and they were not afraid of the king's commandment. <sup>24</sup> By **faith** Moses, when he was come to years, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter; <sup>25</sup> Choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season; <sup>26</sup> Esteeming the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures in Egypt: for he had respect unto the recompence of the reward. <sup>27</sup> By **faith** he forsook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king: for he endured, as seeing

him who is invisible. <sup>28</sup> Through **faith** he kept the passover, and the sprinkling of blood, lest he that destroyed the firstborn should touch them. <sup>29</sup> By **faith** they passed through the Red sea as by dry land: which the Egyptians assaying to do were drowned. <sup>30</sup> By **faith** the walls of Jericho fell down, after they were compassed about seven days. <sup>31</sup> By **faith** the harlot Rahab perished not with them that believed not, when she had received the spies with peace.

<sup>32</sup> And what shall I more say? for the time would fail me to tell of Gedeon, and of Barak, and of Samson, and of Jephthae; of David also, and Samuel, and of the prophets: <sup>33</sup> Who through **faith** subdued kingdoms, wrought righteousness, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions, <sup>34</sup> Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens. <sup>35</sup> Women received their dead raised to life again: and others were tortured, not accepting deliverance; that they might obtain a better resurrection: <sup>36</sup> And others had trial of cruel mockings and scourgings, yea, moreover of bonds and imprisonment: <sup>37</sup> They were stoned, they were sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the sword: they wandered about in sheepskins and goatskins; being destitute, afflicted, tormented; <sup>38</sup> (Of whom the world was not worthy:) they wandered in deserts, and in mountains, and in dens and caves of the earth. <sup>39</sup> And these all, having obtained a good report through **faith**, received not the promise: <sup>40</sup> God having provided some better thing for us, that they without us should not be made perfect.

## Summary

In a biblical sense, faith only applies to Christianity and the God of heaven. It is the fruit of the Spirit, a gift of God. It "is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen." Faith is a verb. Faith is an action. It not only includes believing but actions taken on that belief. It is obedience in response to the Holy Spirit of God. If there is no action, there is no faith.

We receive faith through God; through hearing His word and through reading His word. It also comes through prayer and fasting. And when we do these things we get to know God better. Therefore, faith comes from a deeper relationship with God; by getting to know him better.

It impossible to please God without faith and we cannot be saved without faith. Through faith, we can do anything God has for us to do! Some twist the meaning a scripture and teach that faith can be used to achieve our own ambitions but that is wrong. Faith is used to achieve God's purpose for our lives.

There is no faith without works because faith is a verb. We must take action on our faith. If we believe God, we will strive to do the things He asks us to do in His word. Further, we will strive to do those things He speaks to us on our heart. Warning: He will ask us to do things that seem impossible and that is where faith comes in.

God's faithful servants, as recorded in Hebrews 11, took action on what God had showed them or asked them to do. None of them were perfect but because of grace, God only records their faithful acts in Hebrews. He will do the same for us. God will record our faithful acts of faith and will blot out our failures. What a Great God!



# #8

## Grace

Webster's says that grace is: "unmerited divine assistance given man for his regeneration or sanctification." The text below tells us what we need to know about God's grace.

### Our Need and Source of Grace

**Romans 3:23-26** – <sup>23</sup> For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God; <sup>24</sup> Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus: <sup>25</sup> Whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God; <sup>26</sup> To declare, I say, at this time his righteousness: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus.

### Jesus and Grace

**John 1:1-4 and 14** – <sup>1</sup> In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. <sup>2</sup> The same was in the beginning with God. <sup>3</sup> All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made. <sup>4</sup> In him was life; and the life was the light of men. <sup>14</sup> And **the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us**, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) **full of grace and truth**.

**John 1:16** – And of his fulness have all we received, and **grace for grace**.

**John 1:17** – For the law was given by Moses, but **grace and truth came by Jesus Christ**.

**Luke 2:40** – And the child [Jesus] grew, and waxed strong in spirit, filled with wisdom: and **the grace of God was upon him**.

**Hebrews 2:9** – But we see **Jesus**, who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour; that he **by the grace of God should taste death for every man**.

**Acts 4:33** – And with great power gave the apostles witness of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus: and **great grace was upon them all**.

**Acts 15:11-12** – <sup>11</sup> But we believe that **through the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ we shall be saved**, even as they. <sup>12</sup> Then all the multitude kept silence, and gave audience to Barnabas and Paul, declaring what miracles and wonders God had wrought among the Gentiles by them.

**Hebrews 4:15-16** – <sup>15</sup> For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin. <sup>16</sup> **Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need**.

## Through Grace We Can Believe

**Acts 18:27** – <sup>27</sup> And when he was disposed to pass into Achaia, the brethren wrote, exhorting the disciples to receive him: who, when he was come, helped them much which had **believed through grace**:

**1 Timothy 1:17** – <sup>14</sup> And **the grace of our Lord was exceeding abundant with faith** and love which is in Christ Jesus.

## The Disciples Teaching on Grace

**Acts 20:32** – And now, brethren, I commend you to God, and to **the word of his grace, which is able to build you up, and to give you an inheritance** among all them which are sanctified.

**Romans 5:1-2** – <sup>1</sup> Therefore **being justified by faith**, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ: <sup>2</sup> By whom also **we have access by faith into this grace** wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God.

**Titus 2:11-14** – <sup>11</sup> For **the grace of God that bringeth salvation** hath appeared to all men, <sup>12</sup> Teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world; <sup>13</sup> Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ; <sup>14</sup> Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

**Ephesians 1:6-12** – <sup>6</sup> To the praise of the glory of **his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved**. <sup>7</sup> **In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace**; <sup>8</sup> Wherein he hath abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence; <sup>9</sup> Having made known unto us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure which he hath purposed in himself: <sup>10</sup> That in the dispensation of the fulness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; even in him: <sup>11</sup> In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will: <sup>12</sup> That we should be to the praise of his glory, who first trusted in Christ.

**2 Thessalonians 2:16-17** – <sup>16</sup> Now **our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and God**, even our Father, which hath loved us, and **hath given us everlasting consolation and good hope through grace**, <sup>17</sup> Comfort your hearts, and stablish you in every good word and work.

**Romans 4:13-16** – <sup>13</sup> For the promise, that he should be the heir of the world, was not to Abraham, or to his seed, through the law, but through the righteousness of faith. <sup>14</sup> For if they which are of the law be heirs, faith is made void, and the promise made of none effect: <sup>15</sup> Because the law worketh wrath: for where no law is, there is no transgression. <sup>16</sup> Therefore **it is of faith, that it might be by grace**; to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed; not to that only which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham; who is the father of us all,

**Romans 1:3-7** – <sup>3</sup> Concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, which was made of the seed of David according to the flesh; <sup>4</sup> And declared to be the Son of God with power, according to the spirit

of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead: <sup>5</sup> By whom **we have received grace** and apostleship, for obedience to the faith among all nations, for his name: <sup>6</sup> Among whom are ye also the called of Jesus Christ: <sup>7</sup> To all that be in Rome, beloved of God, called to be saints: **Grace to you** and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

**2 Corinthians 12:8-9** – <sup>9</sup> And he said unto me, **My grace is sufficient for thee**: for my strength is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me.

**2 Corinthians 6:1-2** – <sup>1</sup> We then, as workers together with him, beseech you also that ye **receive not the grace of God in vain**. <sup>2</sup> (For he saith, I have heard thee in a time accepted, and in the day of salvation have I succoured thee: behold, now is the accepted time; behold, now is the day of salvation.)

## Spiritual Gifts Come Through God's Grace

**Romans 12:4-7** – <sup>4</sup> For as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office: <sup>5</sup> So we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another. <sup>6</sup> **Having then gifts differing according to the grace that is given to us**, whether prophecy, let us prophesy according to the proportion of faith; <sup>7</sup> Or ministry, let us wait on our ministering: or he that teacheth, on teaching;

**1 Peter 4:8-11** – <sup>8</sup> And above all things have fervent charity among yourselves: for charity shall cover the multitude of sins. <sup>9</sup> Use hospitality one to another without grudging. <sup>10</sup> As **every man hath received the gift**, even so minister the same one to another, **as good stewards of the manifold grace of God**. <sup>11</sup> If any man speak, let him speak as the oracles of God; if any man minister, let him do it as of the ability which God giveth: that God in all things may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom be praise and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

## Works

**Ephesians 2:4-10** – <sup>4</sup> But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, <sup>5</sup> Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, **(by grace ye are saved;)** <sup>6</sup> And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus: <sup>7</sup> That in the ages to come **he might shew the exceeding riches of his grace** in his kindness toward us through Christ Jesus. <sup>8</sup> **For by grace are ye saved through faith**; and that **not of yourselves: it is the gift of God**: <sup>9</sup> **Not of works, lest any man should boast**. <sup>10</sup> For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.

**Titus 3:1-8** – <sup>1</sup> Put them in mind to be subject to principalities and powers, to obey magistrates, to be ready to every good work, <sup>2</sup> To speak evil of no man, to be no brawlers, but gentle, shewing all meekness unto all men. <sup>3</sup> For we ourselves also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving divers lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful, and hating one another. <sup>4</sup> But after that the kindness and love of God our Saviour toward man appeared, <sup>5</sup> **Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us**, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost; <sup>6</sup> Which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour; <sup>7</sup>

**That being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life.** <sup>8</sup> This is a faithful saying, and these things I will that thou affirm constantly, that **they which have believed in God might be careful to maintain good works.** These things are good and profitable unto men.

**Romans 11:5-7** – <sup>5</sup> Even so then at this present time also **there is a remnant according to the election of grace.** <sup>6</sup> And **if by grace, then is it no more of works:** otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no more grace: otherwise work is no more work. <sup>7</sup> What then? Israel hath not obtained that which he seeketh for; but the election hath obtained it, and the rest were blinded.

**Galatians 5:4-5** – <sup>4</sup> **Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by the law; ye are fallen from grace.** <sup>5</sup> For we through the Spirit wait for the hope of righteousness by faith.

**Romans 4:1-5** – <sup>1</sup> What shall we say then that Abraham our father, as pertaining to the flesh, hath found? <sup>2</sup> For if Abraham were justified by works, he hath whereof to glory; but not before God. <sup>3</sup> For what saith the scripture? Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto him for righteousness. <sup>4</sup> Now **to him that worketh is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt.** <sup>5</sup> But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness.

**Galatians 2:16-21** – <sup>16</sup> Knowing that **a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ,** even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and **not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.** <sup>17</sup> But if, while we seek to be justified by Christ, we ourselves also are found sinners, is therefore Christ the minister of sin? God forbid. <sup>18</sup> For if I build again the things which I destroyed, I make myself a transgressor. <sup>19</sup> For I through the law am dead to the law, that I might live unto God. <sup>20</sup> I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me. <sup>21</sup> **I do not frustrate the grace of God: for if righteousness come by the law, then Christ is dead in vain.**

## Sin and Grace

**Romans 6:1-2** – <sup>1</sup> What shall we say then? **Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound?** <sup>2</sup> God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein?

**Romans 6:14-16** – <sup>14</sup> For sin shall not have dominion over you: for **ye are not under the law, but under grace.** <sup>15</sup> What then? **shall we sin,** because we are not under the law, but under grace? **God forbid.** <sup>16</sup> Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?

**1 John 3:8-11** – <sup>8</sup> **He that committeth sin is of the devil;** for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil. <sup>9</sup> **Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin;** for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God. <sup>10</sup> In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: **whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God,** neither he that loveth not his brother.

**Hebrews 10:26-27** – <sup>26</sup> For if we **sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the**

**truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins,** <sup>27</sup> But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries.

**Romans 5:14-21** – <sup>14</sup> Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adam's transgression, who is the figure of him that was to come. <sup>15</sup> But not as the offence, so also is **the free gift**. For if through the offence of one many be dead, much more the **grace** of God, and the gift by **grace**, which is by one man, Jesus Christ, hath abounded unto many. <sup>16</sup> And not as it was by one that sinned, so is the gift: for the judgment was by one to condemnation, but the free gift is of many offences unto justification. <sup>17</sup> For if by one man's offence death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of **grace** and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ.) <sup>18</sup> Therefore as by the offence of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one **the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life**. <sup>19</sup> For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous. <sup>20</sup> Moreover the law entered, that the offence might abound. But **where sin abounded, grace did much more abound:** <sup>21</sup> That as **sin hath reigned unto death, even so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life by Jesus Christ our Lord**.

**Galatians 5:19-25** – <sup>19</sup> Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, <sup>20</sup> Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, <sup>21</sup> Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God. <sup>22</sup> But **the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith,** <sup>23</sup> **Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law.** <sup>24</sup> And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts. <sup>25</sup> If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit.

**Ephesians 5:8-11** – <sup>8</sup> For ye were sometimes darkness, but now are ye light in the Lord: walk as children of light: <sup>9</sup> **(For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness and righteousness and truth;)** <sup>10</sup> Proving what is acceptable unto the Lord. <sup>11</sup> And **have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness,** but rather reprove them.

**2 Peter 2:20-22** – <sup>20</sup> For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning. <sup>21</sup> For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them. <sup>22</sup> But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again; and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire.

## Grace and Deceitfulness

**Jude 3-4** – <sup>3</sup> Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation, it was needful for me to write unto you, and exhort you that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints. <sup>4</sup> For there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of old ordained to this condemnation, **ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousness,** and denying the only Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ.

## Summary

We are all in need of the grace of God because we have all sinned and therefore under a sentence of death. The purpose of grace is to cleanse us from our sins and therefore give us eternal life. Jesus is full of grace and truth and he died in our place. While he suffered death in our place, he bestowed upon us his perfect righteousness through grace which we receive by faith. Not even faith is possible without God, through grace God enables us to believe.

We are saved by grace through our faith and our salvation is a free gift. There is nothing we can do to earn it. No service to God can atone for our sins. The only acceptable atonement is the death of Jesus Christ which we receive by grace through faith.

Although we are no longer under the curse of the law which is death, we are not to continue in sin. If we continue in sin without confession and repentance, then the grace of Jesus is not upon us. If we have received the grace of God, then his spirit lives in us. The fruit of "the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance."

# #9

## Repentance

According to Webster's, repent is a verb (it is something we do). It has two components. One is to feel sorrow or regret. The other is "to turn from sin and dedicate oneself to the amendment of one's life." If a person does not exercise both of these, then they have not repented.

### Jesus Preached Repentance

**Mathew 4:17** – From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, **Repent**: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.

**Matthew 9:12-13** – <sup>12</sup> But when Jesus heard that, he said unto them, They that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick. <sup>13</sup> But go ye and learn what that meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to **repentance**. (See also Mark 2:17)

**Matthew 11:20-24** – <sup>20</sup> Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they **repented** not: <sup>21</sup> Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works, which were done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have **repented** long ago in sackcloth and ashes. <sup>22</sup> But I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgment, than for you. <sup>23</sup> And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works, which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day. <sup>24</sup> But I say unto you, That it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment, than for thee.

**Matthew 12:38-41** – <sup>38</sup> Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee. <sup>39</sup> But he answered and said unto them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas: <sup>40</sup> For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. <sup>41</sup> The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: because they **repented** at the preaching of Jonas; and, behold, a greater than Jonas is here.

**Luke 13:1-5** – <sup>1</sup> There were present at that season some that told him of the Galilaeans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices. <sup>2</sup> And Jesus answering said unto them, Suppose ye that these Galilaeans were sinners above all the Galilaeans, because they suffered such things? <sup>3</sup> I tell you, Nay: but, except ye **repent**, ye shall all likewise perish. <sup>4</sup> Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and slew them, think ye that they were sinners above all men that dwelt in Jerusalem? <sup>5</sup> I tell you, Nay: but, except ye **repent**, ye shall all likewise perish.

**Luke 15:4-7** – <sup>4</sup> What man of you, having an hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, until he find it? <sup>5</sup> And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his shoulders, rejoicing. <sup>6</sup> And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends and neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoice with me; for I have found my sheep which was lost. <sup>7</sup> I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that **repenteth**, more than

over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance.

**Luke 24:36 and 46-49** – <sup>36</sup> And as they thus spake, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you.... <sup>46</sup> And said unto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day: <sup>47</sup> And that **repentance** and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. <sup>48</sup> And ye are witnesses of these things. <sup>49</sup> And, behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high.

## The Apostles Preached Repentance

**Mathew 6:7-13** – <sup>7</sup> And he called unto him the twelve, and began to send them forth by two and two; and gave them power over unclean spirits; <sup>8</sup> And commanded them that they should take nothing for their journey, save a staff only; no scrip, no bread, no money in their purse: <sup>9</sup> But be shod with sandals; and not put on two coats. <sup>10</sup> And he said unto them, In what place soever ye enter into an house, there abide till ye depart from that place. <sup>11</sup> And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear you, when ye depart thence, shake off the dust under your feet for a testimony against them. Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrhah in the day of judgment, than for that city. <sup>12</sup> And they went out, and preached that men should **repent**. <sup>13</sup> And they cast out many devils, and anointed with oil many that were sick, and healed them.

**Acts 2:38** – Then Peter said unto them, **Repent**, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

**Acts 3:18-19** – <sup>18</sup> But those things, which God before had shewed by the mouth of all his prophets, that Christ should suffer, he hath so fulfilled. <sup>19</sup> **Repent** ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord;

**Acts 17:29-31** – <sup>29</sup> Forasmuch then as we are the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone, graven by art and man's device. <sup>30</sup> And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commandeth all men every where to **repent**: <sup>31</sup> Because he hath appointed a day, in the which he will judge the world in righteousness by that man whom he hath ordained; whereof he hath given assurance unto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead.

**Acts 19:4-6** – <sup>4</sup> Then said Paul, John verily baptized with the baptism of **repentance**, saying unto the people, that they should believe on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus. <sup>5</sup> When they heard this, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus. <sup>6</sup> And when Paul had laid his hands upon them, the Holy Ghost came on them; and they spake with tongues, and prophesied.

**Acts 20:20-21** – <sup>20</sup> And how I kept back nothing that was profitable unto you, but have shewed you, and have taught you publickly, and from house to house, <sup>21</sup> Testifying both to the Jews, and also to the Greeks, **repentance** toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ.

**Acts 26:19-21** – <sup>19</sup> Whereupon, O king Agrippa, I was not disobedient unto the heavenly vision: <sup>20</sup> But shewed first unto them of Damascus, and at Jerusalem, and throughout all the coasts of Judaea, and then to the Gentiles, that they should **repent** and turn to God, and do works meet for **repentance**. <sup>21</sup> For these causes the Jews caught me in the temple, and went about to kill me.



**2 Corinthians 12:20-21** – <sup>20</sup> For I fear, lest, when I come, I shall not find you such as I would, and that I shall be found unto you such as ye would not: lest there be debates, envyings, wraths, strifes, backbitings, whisperings, swellings, tumults: <sup>21</sup> And lest, when I come again, my God will humble me among you, and that I shall bewail many which have sinned already, and have not **repented** of the uncleanness and fornication and lasciviousness which they have committed.

**2 Timothy 2:22-26** – <sup>2</sup> Flee also youthful lusts: but follow righteousness, faith, charity, peace, with them that call on the Lord out of a pure heart. <sup>23</sup> But foolish and unlearned questions avoid, knowing that they do gender strifes. <sup>24</sup> And the servant of the Lord must not strive; but be gentle unto all men, apt to teach, patient, <sup>25</sup> In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them **repentance** to the acknowledging of the truth; <sup>26</sup> And that they may recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will.

**2 Peter 3:9-10** – <sup>9</sup> The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to **repentance**. <sup>10</sup> But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up.

## The Book of Revelation Warns Us To Repent

**Revelation 2:12-17** – <sup>12</sup> And to the angel of the church in Pergamos write; These things saith he which hath the sharp sword with two edges; <sup>13</sup> I know thy works, and where thou dwellest, even where Satan's seat is: and thou holdest fast my name, and hast not denied my faith, even in those days wherein Antipas was my faithful martyr, who was slain among you, where Satan dwelleth. <sup>14</sup> But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balac to cast a stumblingblock before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed unto idols, and to commit fornication. <sup>15</sup> So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, which thing I hate. <sup>16</sup> **Repent**; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth. <sup>17</sup> He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth saving he that receiveth it.

**Revelation 2:18-23** – <sup>18</sup> And unto the angel of the church in Thyatira write; These things saith the Son of God, who hath his eyes like unto a flame of fire, and his feet are like fine brass; <sup>19</sup> I know thy works, and charity, and service, and faith, and thy patience, and thy works; and the last to be more than the first. <sup>20</sup> Notwithstanding I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman Jezebel, which calleth herself a prophetess, to teach and to seduce my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols. <sup>21</sup> And I gave her space to **repent** of her fornication; and she **repented** not. <sup>22</sup> Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation, except they **repent** of their deeds. <sup>23</sup> And I will kill her children with death; and all the churches shall know that I am he which searcheth the reins and hearts: and I will give unto every one of you according to your works.

**Revelation 3:1-3** – <sup>1</sup> And unto the angel of the church in Sardis write; These things saith he that hath the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars; I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou

lives, and art dead. <sup>2</sup> Be watchful, and strengthen the things which remain, that are ready to die: for I have not found thy works perfect before God. <sup>3</sup> Remember therefore how thou hast received and heard, and hold fast, and **repent**. If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee as a thief, and thou shalt not know what hour I will come upon thee.

**Revelation 3:19-22** – <sup>19</sup> As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and **repent**. <sup>20</sup> Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me. <sup>21</sup> To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne. <sup>22</sup> He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

## The Source of Repentance

**Acts 5:31** – Him hath God exalted with his right hand to be a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins.

**Romans 2:4** – Or despisest thou the riches of his goodness and forbearance and longsuffering; not knowing that the goodness of God leadeth thee to repentance?

## False Repentance

**2 Corinthians 7:10** – For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death.

## Summary

Jesus and his disciples clearly instructed that a person can not be saved without repentance. There are two elements of repentance. One is to feel true sorrow or regret. The other requires us “to turn from sin and dedicate oneself to the amendment of one's life.” If a person does not exercise both of these, then they have not repented and cannot be saved.

By repenting, one does not save themselves. Through repentance you cannot atone for your sins. Repentance shows that you trust God, that you believe his law is good and that you desire to be obedient to his law.

God is going to put an end to sin. But he has given us freewill. Therefore, God can only save those who love the law and hate sin. If God saved those who have not repented, sin would never end!

# #10

## Confession

Many people believe that they are genuinely good. But God says we are all sinners and that there is not one who is good. God has made a provision for the forgiveness of our sins through the death and resurrection of his son Jesus Christ. But as we shall see in the word of God below, God requires that we confess our sins to him.

### Forgiveness Requires Confession

**Leviticus 5:5** – And it shall be, when he shall be guilty in one of these things, that he shall confess that he hath sinned in that thing:

**Leviticus 26:40-42** – <sup>40</sup> If they shall confess their iniquity, and the iniquity of their fathers, with their trespass which they trespassed against me, and that also they have walked contrary unto me; <sup>41</sup> And that I also have walked contrary unto them, and have brought them into the land of their enemies; if then their uncircumcised hearts be humbled, and they then accept of the punishment of their iniquity: <sup>42</sup> Then will I remember my covenant with Jacob, and also my covenant with Isaac, and also my covenant with Abraham will I remember; and I will remember the land.

**Ezra 10:10-11** – <sup>10</sup> And Ezra the priest stood up, and said unto them, Ye have transgressed, and have taken strange wives, to increase the trespass of Israel. <sup>11</sup> Now therefore make confession unto the LORD God of your fathers, and do his pleasure: and separate yourselves from the people of the land, and from the strange wives.

**Psalms 32:5** – I acknowledged my sin unto thee, and mine iniquity have I not hid. I said, I will confess my transgressions unto the LORD; and thou forgavest the iniquity of my sin.

**1 John 1:9-10** – <sup>9</sup> If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. <sup>10</sup> If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.

### Nehemiah's and Israel's Confession

**Nehemiah 1:5-7** – <sup>5</sup> And said, I beseech thee, O LORD God of heaven, the great and terrible God, that keepeth covenant and mercy for them that love him and observe his commandments: <sup>6</sup> Let thine ear now be attentive, and thine eyes open, that thou mayest hear the prayer of thy servant, which I pray before thee now, day and night, for the children of Israel thy servants, and confess the sins of the children of Israel, which we have sinned against thee: both I and my father's house have sinned. <sup>7</sup> We have dealt very corruptly against thee, and have not kept the commandments, nor the statutes, nor the judgments, which thou commandedst thy servant Moses.

**Nehemiah 9:1-4** – <sup>1</sup> Now in the twenty and fourth day of this month the children of Israel were assembled with fasting, and with sackclothes, and earth upon them. <sup>2</sup> And the seed of Israel separated

themselves from all strangers, and stood and confessed their sins, and the iniquities of their fathers. <sup>3</sup> And they stood up in their place, and read in the book of the law of the LORD their God one fourth part of the day; and another fourth part they confessed, and worshipped the LORD their God.

## **Daniels Confession On Behalf Of Israel**

**Daniel 9:4-19** – <sup>4</sup> And I prayed unto the LORD my God, and made my confession, and said, O Lord, the great and dreadful God, keeping the covenant and mercy to them that love him, and to them that keep his commandments; <sup>5</sup> We have sinned, and have committed iniquity, and have done wickedly, and have rebelled, even by departing from thy precepts and from thy judgments: <sup>6</sup> Neither have we hearkened unto thy servants the prophets, which spake in thy name to our kings, our princes, and our fathers, and to all the people of the land. <sup>7</sup> O Lord, righteousness belongeth unto thee, but unto us confusion of faces, as at this day; to the men of Judah, and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem, and unto all Israel, that are near, and that are far off, through all the countries whither thou hast driven them, because of their trespass that they have trespassed against thee. <sup>8</sup> O Lord, to us belongeth confusion of face, to our kings, to our princes, and to our fathers, because we have sinned against thee. <sup>9</sup> To the Lord our God belong mercies and forgivenesses, though we have rebelled against him; <sup>10</sup> Neither have we obeyed the voice of the LORD our God, to walk in his laws, which he set before us by his servants the prophets. <sup>11</sup> Yea, all Israel have transgressed thy law, even by departing, that they might not obey thy voice; therefore the curse is poured upon us, and the oath that is written in the law of Moses the servant of God, because we have sinned against him. <sup>12</sup> And he hath confirmed his words, which he spake against us, and against our judges that judged us, by bringing upon us a great evil: for under the whole heaven hath not been done as hath been done upon Jerusalem. <sup>13</sup> As it is written in the law of Moses, all this evil is come upon us: yet made we not our prayer before the LORD our God, that we might turn from our iniquities, and understand thy truth. <sup>14</sup> Therefore hath the LORD watched upon the evil, and brought it upon us: for the LORD our God is righteous in all his works which he doeth: for we obeyed not his voice. <sup>15</sup> And now, O Lord our God, that hast brought thy people forth out of the land of Egypt with a mighty hand, and hast gotten thee renown, as at this day; we have sinned, we have done wickedly. <sup>16</sup> O Lord, according to all thy righteousness, I beseech thee, let thine anger and thy fury be turned away from thy city Jerusalem, thy holy mountain: because for our sins, and for the iniquities of our fathers, Jerusalem and thy people are become a reproach to all that are about us. <sup>17</sup> Now therefore, O our God, hear the prayer of thy servant, and his supplications, and cause thy face to shine upon thy sanctuary that is desolate, for the Lord's sake. <sup>18</sup> O my God, incline thine ear, and hear; open thine eyes, and behold our desolations, and the city which is called by thy name: for we do not present our supplications before thee for our righteousnesses, but for thy great mercies. <sup>19</sup> O Lord, hear; O Lord, forgive; O Lord, hearken and do; defer not, for thine own sake, O my God: for thy city and thy people are called by thy name.

## **Make Confession To Someone Who Will Pray For You**

**James 5:16** - Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed. The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.

## Summary

We have all sinned. If we confess our sins to God he will forgive us. The Lord Jesus Christ died for our sins that we might have his righteousness. Confession is simple. We just need to speak to God, tell him what we have done wrong, tell him we are sorry, ask him to forgive us and ask him for strength to overcome this sin in the future.

# #11

## Forgiveness

We can receive forgiveness from God and we can give forgiveness to others. As you shall see in the texts below, we need both. We need to receive God's forgiveness and we need to forgive others. If we are not willing to do both of these, we have no hope.

### Jesus & God Forgive

**Micah 7:18-19** – <sup>18</sup> Who is a God like unto thee, that pardoneth iniquity, and passeth by the transgression of the remnant of his heritage? he retaineth not his anger for ever, because he delighteth in mercy. <sup>19</sup> He will turn again, he will have compassion upon us; he will subdue our iniquities; and thou wilt cast all their sins into the depths of the sea.

**Matthew 9:4-6** – <sup>4</sup> And Jesus knowing their thoughts said, Wherefore think ye evil in your hearts? <sup>5</sup> For whether is easier, to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee; or to say, Arise, and walk? <sup>6</sup> But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins, (then saith he to the sick of the palsy,) Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thine house. (See also Mark 2:10 and Luke 5:24)

**Colossians 1:12-14** – <sup>12</sup> Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light: <sup>13</sup> Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son: <sup>14</sup> In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins:

**Ephesians 1:6-7** – <sup>6</sup> To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved. <sup>7</sup> In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace;

**Acts 5:29-31** – <sup>29</sup> Then Peter and the other apostles answered and said, We ought to obey God rather than men. <sup>30</sup> The God of our fathers raised up Jesus, whom ye slew and hanged on a tree. <sup>31</sup> Him hath God exalted with his right hand to be a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins.

**Acts 26:15-18** – <sup>15</sup> And I said, Who art thou, Lord? And he said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest. <sup>16</sup> But rise, and stand upon thy feet: for I have appeared unto thee for this purpose, to make thee a minister and a witness both of these things which thou hast seen, and of those things in the which I will appear unto thee; <sup>17</sup> Delivering thee from the people, and from the Gentiles, unto whom now I send thee, <sup>18</sup> To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me.

### We Need To Confess And Ask For Forgiveness

**Psalm 32:5** – I acknowledged my sin unto thee, and mine iniquity have I not hid. I said, I will

confess my transgressions unto the LORD; and thou forgavest the iniquity of my sin.

**1 John 1:9** – If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

**Daniel 9:4-9** – <sup>4</sup> And I [Daniel] prayed unto the LORD my God, and made my confession, and said, O Lord, the great and dreadful God, keeping the covenant and mercy to them that love him, and to them that keep his commandments; <sup>5</sup> We have sinned, and have committed iniquity, and have done wickedly, and have rebelled, even by departing from thy precepts and from thy judgments: <sup>6</sup> Neither have we hearkened unto thy servants the prophets, which spake in thy name to our kings, our princes, and our fathers, and to all the people of the land. <sup>7</sup> O Lord, righteousness belongeth unto thee, but unto us confusion of faces, as at this day; to the men of Judah, and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem, and unto all Israel, that are near, and that are far off, through all the countries whither thou hast driven them, because of their trespass that they have trespassed against thee. <sup>8</sup> O Lord, to us belongeth confusion of face, to our kings, to our princes, and to our fathers, because we have sinned against thee. <sup>9</sup> To the Lord our God belong mercies and forgivenesses, though we have rebelled against him;

## **Our Duty To Forgive**

**Luke 6:37** – Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven:

**Ephesians 4:32** – And be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you.

**Colossians 3:13** – Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any: even as Christ forgave you, so also do ye.

## **How Many Times Should We Forgive?**

**Luke 17:3-4** – <sup>3</sup> Take heed to yourselves: If thy brother trespass against thee, rebuke him; and if he repent, forgive him. <sup>4</sup> And if he trespass against thee seven times in a day, and seven times in a day turn again to thee, saying, I repent; thou shalt forgive him.

**Matthew 18:21-22** – <sup>21</sup> Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times? <sup>22</sup> Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven.

## **What Happens If We Don't Forgive?**

**Matthew 6:14-15** – <sup>14</sup> For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you: <sup>15</sup> But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

**Mark 11:25-26** – <sup>25</sup> And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have ought against any: that your

Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses. <sup>26</sup> But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.

**Matthew 18:23-35** – <sup>23</sup> Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of his servants. <sup>24</sup> And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand talents. <sup>25</sup> But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. <sup>26</sup> The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. <sup>27</sup> Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt. <sup>28</sup> But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellowservants, which owed him an hundred pence: and he laid hands on him, and took him by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest. <sup>29</sup> And his fellowservant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. <sup>30</sup> And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt. <sup>31</sup> So when his fellowservants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done. <sup>32</sup> Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me: <sup>33</sup> Shouldest not thou also have had compassion on thy fellowservant, even as I had pity on thee? <sup>34</sup> And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him. <sup>35</sup> So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.

## The Unforgivable Sin

**Luke 12:10** – And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but unto him that blasphemeth against the Holy Ghost it shall not be forgiven.

**Mark 3:29** – But he that shall blaspheme against the Holy Ghost hath never forgiveness, but is in danger of eternal damnation:

## Summary

God forgives us when we repent and ask for forgiveness. We are also commanded by God to forgive others. Jesus stated: "For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you: But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses." ( Matthew 6:14-15)

Jesus said that our forgiveness should be continual on an ongoing basis. When Peter asked Jesus how many times he should forgive someone, Jesus answered seventy times seven. Jesus meant that there should be no end to our forgiveness. The good news is that this is a reflection of the infinite forgiveness that our Father in heaven has for us when we truly repent and confess our sins.

Sometimes forgiving others can be near impossible. How do you forgive someone who has done something truly horrible like killing a member of your family? It begins with being willing to forgive; then confessing your unforgiveness and finally, asking for help from your Father in heaven. Our Father will answer your prayers and perform a miracle in your heart.

Sometimes when we pray for help, God answers immediately. Sometimes he answers prayer over time. In either case, God answers our prayer. It is impossible to know why God answers prayer in different ways at different times except that he does it for our benefit.



God is the alpha and omega. The beginning and the end. He knows all things past, present and future. He has promised: "And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose." (Romans 8:29)

# #12

## Prayer

Prayer is how we communicate with God; it is how we talk to God. When we examine the life of Jesus in scripture, we can see a perfect example of prayer life. Scripture shows us when Jesus prayed, how often he prayed, and what he prayed about. It also gives us some great examples of his prayers.

### The Prayer Life of Jesus

**Matthew 1:35** – And in the morning, rising up a great while before day, he [Jesus] went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed.

**Matthew 14:23** – And when he [Jesus] had sent the multitudes away, he went up into a mountain apart to pray: and when the evening was come, he was there alone. (See also Mark 6:46)

**Luke 5:16** – And he [Jesus] withdrew himself into the wilderness, and prayed.

**Luke 6:12** – And it came to pass in those days, that he [Jesus] went out into a mountain to pray, and continued all night in prayer to God.

**Luke 9:18** – And it came to pass, as he [Jesus] was alone praying, his disciples were with him: and he asked them, saying, Whom say the people that I am?

**Luke 9:28** – And it came to pass about an eight days after these sayings, he took Peter and John and James, and went up into a mountain to pray.

### The Power of Prayer

**Matthew 21:22** – And all things, whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive.

**John 16:23-24** – <sup>23</sup> And in that day ye shall ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give it you. <sup>24</sup> Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full.

**James 5:16** – ...The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.

**Mark 11:24** – <sup>24</sup> Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them.

**Matthew 11:23-24** – <sup>23</sup> For verily I say unto you, That whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall come to pass; he shall have whatsoever he saith. <sup>24</sup> Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them.

**Matthew 7:7-11** – <sup>7</sup> Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: <sup>8</sup> For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. <sup>9</sup> Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him

a stone? <sup>10</sup> Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent? <sup>11</sup> If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him?

**1 John 3:22** - And whatsoever we ask, we receive of him, because we keep his commandments, and do those things that are pleasing in his sight.

**Mathew 18:19-20** – <sup>19</sup> Again I say unto you, That if two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven. <sup>20</sup> For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

## The Prayers of Jesus

**Matthew 26:36-44** – <sup>36</sup> Then cometh Jesus with them unto a place called Gethsemane, and saith unto the disciples, Sit ye here, while I go and pray yonder. <sup>37</sup> And he took with him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowful and very heavy. <sup>38</sup> Then saith he unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death: tarry ye here, and watch with me. <sup>39</sup> And he went a little further, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me: nevertheless **not as I will, but as thou wilt.** <sup>40</sup> And he cometh unto the disciples, and findeth them asleep, and saith unto Peter, What, could ye not watch with me one hour? <sup>41</sup> Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak. <sup>42</sup> He went away again the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup may not pass away from me, except I drink it, **thy will be done.** <sup>43</sup> And he came and found them asleep again: for their eyes were heavy. <sup>44</sup> And he left them, and went away again, and prayed the third time, saying the same words. (See also Mark 14:32-39)

**John 17:1-26** – <sup>1</sup> These words spake Jesus, and lifted up his eyes to heaven, and said, Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee: <sup>2</sup> As thou hast given him power over <sup>3</sup> all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as thou hast given him. And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent. <sup>4</sup> I have glorified thee on the earth: I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do. <sup>5</sup> And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.

<sup>6</sup> I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy word. <sup>7</sup> Now they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me are of thee. <sup>8</sup> For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me. <sup>9</sup> I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me; for they are thine. <sup>10</sup> And all mine are thine, and thine are mine; and I am glorified in them.

<sup>11</sup> And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one, as we are. <sup>12</sup> While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled. <sup>13</sup> And now come I to thee; and these things I speak in the world, that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves. <sup>14</sup> I have given them thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I

am not of the world. <sup>15</sup> I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil. <sup>16</sup> They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

<sup>17</sup> Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth. <sup>18</sup> As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world. <sup>19</sup> And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth.

<sup>20</sup> Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word; <sup>21</sup> That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. <sup>22</sup> And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one: <sup>23</sup> I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me.

<sup>24</sup> Father, I will that they also, whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am; that they may behold my glory, which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world. <sup>25</sup> O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee: but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me. <sup>26</sup> And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare it: that the love wherewith thou hast loved me may be in them, and I in them.

## What Should We Pray For?

**Luke 11:13** – If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the **Holy Spirit** to them that ask him?

**Luke 22:40** – And when he [Jesus] was at the place, he said unto them, **Pray that ye enter not into temptation.**

**James 5:13-14** – <sup>13</sup> Is any among you afflicted? let him pray. Is any merry? let him sing Psalm. <sup>14</sup> Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord:

**James 5:16** – Confess your faults one to another, and **pray one for another**, that ye may be healed. The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.(Jas 5:16).

**Philippians 1:9** – And this I **pray, that your love may abound** yet more and more in knowledge and in all judgment;

**2 Corinthians 13:7** – Now I **pray to God that ye do no evil**; not that we should appear approved, but that ye should do that which is honest, though we be as reprobates.

**Matthew 9:37-38** – <sup>37</sup> Then saith he unto his disciples, The harvest truly is plenteous, but the labourers are few; <sup>38</sup> **Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth labourers into his harvest.** (See also Luke 10:2)

**2 Thessalonians 3:1-2** – <sup>1</sup> Finally, brethren, **pray for us**, that the word of the Lord may have free course, and be glorified, even as it is with you: <sup>2</sup> And that we may be delivered from unreasonable and wicked men: for all men have not faith.

**Mark 13:32-33** – <sup>32</sup> But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father. <sup>33</sup> Take ye heed, **watch and pray**: for ye know not when the time is.

**Matthew 5:44-45** – <sup>44</sup> But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; <sup>45</sup> That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust. (See also Luke 6:28)

## Jesus Instructs Us On How To Pray

**Matthew 6:6-15** – <sup>6</sup> But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly. <sup>7</sup> But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. <sup>8</sup> Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him.

<sup>9</sup> After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. <sup>10</sup> Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. <sup>11</sup> Give us this day our daily bread. <sup>12</sup> And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. <sup>13</sup> And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen. (See also Luke 11:1-4)

## When Should We Pray

**1 Timothy 2:8** – I will therefore that men **pray every where**, lifting up holy hands, without wrath and doubting.

**Luke 18:1** – And he spake a parable unto them to this end, that **men ought always to pray**, and not to faint;

**Luke 21:36** – Watch ye therefore, and **pray always**, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man.

**1 Thessalonians 5:17** – **Pray without ceasing.**

## Summary

Prayer is a wonderful tool by which we can talk to our Father in heaven. There is nothing mysterious or mystical about it. We just need to speak to him. Jesus laid out the blue print of prayer when he gave us the Our Father.

1. We should address our prayers to the Father: "Our Father which art in heaven."
2. We should praise our Father: "Hallowed be thy name.... For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever."
3. We should pray for God Kingdom to come. "Thy kingdom come."
4. We we pray for God's will to be done in our lives and in the world: "Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven."
5. We should pray for our needs: "Give us this day our daily bread."

6. We should pray for forgiveness: "And forgive us our debts,"
7. We should pray for help to forgive others: "as we forgive our debtors."
8. We should pray for deliverance from temptation: "And lead us not into temptation,"
9. We should pray for protection from evil: " but deliver us from evil."

Our prayer life should reflect the fact that God is always with us. He should continually be in our minds and we should continually speak to him through prayer. This is what Jesus modeled. He always sought to do his Father's will. This was accomplished through constant prayer or communication with his Father.

We can pray by simply talking to God and expressing our love, gratitude, thanks, praise, needs, concerns, problems, disappointments, pain and our questions. God will listen and he wants to hear. We also need to listen. Since prayer is communication, we need to listen to what God has to say. We can also use scripture in our prayers. We can take God's promises in scripture and we can claim them in prayer on our behalf and on the behalf of others.

# #13

## God In Us

The word of God says that he dwells in his servants. What does this mean and how does it make us different from the rest of the world?

### God Dwells In His Servants

**Ephesians 4:4-6** – <sup>4</sup> There is one body, and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling; <sup>5</sup> One Lord, one faith, one baptism, <sup>6</sup> One God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and **in you all**.

**1 John 4:4** – Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because **greater is he that is in you**, than he that is in the world.

**John 14:16-21** – <sup>16</sup> And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever; <sup>17</sup> Even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him; for **he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you**. <sup>18</sup> I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you. <sup>19</sup> Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more; but ye see me: because I live, ye shall live also. <sup>20</sup> At that day ye shall know that I am in my Father, and ye in me, and I in you. <sup>21</sup> He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself to him.

**Romans 8:9** – But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that **the Spirit of God dwell in you**. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.

**1 Corinthians 3:16** – Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that **the Spirit of God dwelleth in you**?

**1 Corinthians 6:19-20** – <sup>19</sup> What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the **Holy Ghost which is in you**, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own? <sup>20</sup> For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's.

### People of The World or People of God

**1 John 4:5-6** – <sup>5</sup> They are of the world: therefore speak they of the world, and the world heareth them. <sup>6</sup> We are of God: he that knoweth God heareth us; he that is not of God heareth not us. Hereby know we the spirit of truth, and the spirit of error.

**Romans 6:16** – Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?

**Luke 11:23** – [Jesus said:] He that is not with me is against me: and he that gathereth not with me scattereth.

**James 4:4** – Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God.

**Matthew 6:24** – <sup>24</sup> No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

## **The World Hates God's Servants**

**John 15:18-19** – <sup>18</sup> If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you. <sup>19</sup> If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.

**John 17:14** – [Jesus prayed:] I have given them thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

**1 John 3:13** – Marvel not, my brethren, if the world hate you.

## **Summary**

If you are a servant of God, then God dwells in you. If God dwells in you, it will be evident in the way you act and the way you think. You will not be perfect but you will be changed and you will continue to change.

The servants of God are different than the people of the world. The people of the world regard God as their enemy. If you are a servant of God, the people of the world will regard you as their enemy and they will hate you because the spirit of God dwells in you.



# #14

## Servant – Heir – King

A servant's life is not his own. He is obliged to obey his master; he must do the will of his master. He knows his master's voice and he must obey it. A heir will inherit the property or a portion of the property of his or her father. A King has dominion over the people of a defined area. The Bible says that once we become servants of God, we become joint heirs with Christ and are destined to become Kings and Princesses.

### Everyone Is A Servant

**Romans 6:16** – Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?

**Matthew 6:24** – No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon [wealth]. (See also Luke 16:13.)

### Serve The Lord God

**Deuteronomy 6:13** – Thou shalt fear the LORD thy God, and serve him, and shalt swear by his name.

**Joshua 24:14** – Now therefore fear the LORD, and serve him in sincerity and in truth: and put away the gods which your fathers served on the other side of the flood, and in Egypt; and serve ye the LORD.

**Psalms 2:11** – Serve the LORD with fear, and rejoice with trembling.

**Psalms 100:2-5** – <sup>2</sup> Serve the LORD with gladness: come before his presence with singing. <sup>3</sup> Know ye that the LORD he is God: it is he that hath made us, and not we ourselves; we are his people, and the sheep of his pasture. <sup>4</sup> Enter into his gates with thanksgiving, and into his courts with praise: be thankful unto him, and bless his name. <sup>5</sup> For the LORD is good; his mercy is everlasting; and his truth endureth to all generations.

### God's Servants

**Revelation 15:3** – And they sing the song of Moses the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying, Great and marvellous are thy works, Lord God Almighty; just and true are thy ways, thou King of saints.

**Deuteronomy 9:27** – Remember thy servants, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob; look not unto the stubbornness of this people, nor to their wickedness, nor to their sin:

**Joshua 24:31** – And Israel served the LORD all the days of Joshua, and all the days of the elders that overlived Joshua, and which had known all the works of the LORD, that he had done for Israel.

**James 1:1** – James, a servant of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ, to the twelve tribes which are scattered abroad, greeting.

**Revelation 22:6** – And he said unto me, These sayings are faithful and true: and the Lord God of the holy prophets sent his angel to shew unto his servants the things which must shortly be done.

**2 Timothy 2:24-26** – <sup>24</sup> And the servant of the Lord must not strive; but be gentle unto all men, apt to teach, patient, <sup>25</sup> In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth; <sup>26</sup> And that they may recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will.

**1 Corinthians 7:22** – For he that is called in the Lord, being a servant, is the Lord's freeman: likewise also he that is called, being free, is Christ's servant.

## The Life of A Servant of God

**John 10:26-27** – <sup>26</sup> But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you. <sup>27</sup> My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me:

## An Heir Must Begin As A Servant

**Galatians 4:1-2** – <sup>1</sup> Now I say, That the heir, as long as he is a child, differeth nothing from a servant, though he be lord of all; <sup>2</sup> But is under tutors and governors until the time appointed of the father.

**Colossians 3:24** – Knowing that of the Lord ye shall receive the reward of the inheritance: for ye serve the Lord Christ. <sup>25</sup> But he that doeth wrong shall receive for the wrong which he hath done: and there is no respect of persons.

## Heir of God

**Romans 8:14-17** – <sup>14</sup> For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God. <sup>15</sup> For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father. <sup>16</sup> The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God: <sup>17</sup> And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together.

**Galatians 4:3-7** – <sup>3</sup> Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage under the elements of the world: <sup>4</sup> But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law, <sup>5</sup> To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons. <sup>6</sup> And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father. <sup>7</sup> Wherefore thou art no more a servant, but a son; and if a son, then an heir of God

through Christ.

**Galatians 3:29** – And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.

**Romans 4:13** – For the promise, that he should be the heir of the world, was not to Abraham, or to his seed, through the law, but through the righteousness of faith.

**Galatians 4:30-31** – <sup>30</sup> Nevertheless what saith the scripture? Cast out the bondwoman and her son: for the son of the bondwoman shall not be heir with the son of the freewoman. <sup>31</sup> So then, brethren, we are not children of the bondwoman, but of the free.

**Titus 3:7** – That being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life.

## Kings

**Revelation 1:5-6** – <sup>5</sup> And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood, <sup>6</sup> And hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

**Revelation 5:9-10** – <sup>9</sup> And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation; <sup>10</sup> And hast made us unto our God kings and priests: and we shall reign on the earth.

**Revelation 20:4** – And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years.

## Priests

**Revelation 20:6** – Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.

## Summary

The word of God says we are all servants. We either serve God or his enemy Satan. God is calling us to serve him. All the faithful patriarchs of the Bible were servants of God. The servants of God hear his voice and obey.

As a child, an heir begins his life as a servant until a time appointed by his father. God's servants shall receive their inheritance but those who choose not to serve shall not receive their inheritance. God's servants are his adopted sons and daughters. As such, they are joint heirs with Christ. This is

too much to imagine or fully comprehend; we have become joint heirs with the creator of the universe.

If you have accepted Christ as your Saviour, then you are His brother or sister and his joint heir. If you have accepted Christ as your Saviour, you have also been made kings and priests and shall reign with him forever.

# #15

## A New Testament

A Testament is a Will; the legal method by which a person determines the disposition of their property after their death. Concerning the Testament of Jesus Christ, Paul writes: "For where a testament is, there must also of necessity be the death of the testator. For a testament is of force after men are dead: otherwise it is of no strength at all while the testator liveth." (Heb 9:16-17)

### Adam – Son of God

Adam was created by God, that made him a son of God.

**Genesis 1:27** – <sup>27</sup> So **God created man** in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them.

**Genesis 2:7** – <sup>7</sup> And **the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground**, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.

### The Angels - Son's of God

The Angels were also created by God and are therefore, son's of God.

**Job 38:4-7** – <sup>4</sup> Where wast thou when I laid the foundations of the earth? declare, if thou hast understanding. <sup>5</sup> Who hath laid the measures thereof, if thou knowest? or who hath stretched the line upon it? <sup>6</sup> Whereupon are the foundations thereof fastened? or who laid the corner stone thereof; <sup>7</sup> When the morning stars sang together, and **all the sons of God shouted for joy?**

### Jesus – Son of God

Jesus had a heavenly Father and an earthly mother. Therefore, Jesus was both a son of God and a son of man.

**Matthew 1:18** – <sup>18</sup> Now the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise: When as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Ghost.

**Mark 1:1** – <sup>1</sup> The beginning of the gospel of **Jesus Christ, the Son of God;**

### The Adopted Son's of God

Under the laws of the United States and most countries, the natural born sons and daughters have legal right to the estate of their father after his death if there is no Will. We are not natural heirs; we are adopted.

**Galatians 4:4-5** – <sup>4</sup> But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a

woman, made under the law, <sup>5</sup> To redeem them that were under the law, **that we might receive the adoption of sons.**

**Ephesians 1:4-5** – <sup>4</sup> According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: <sup>5</sup> **Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children** by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will,

**Romans 8:22** – <sup>23</sup> And not only they, but ourselves also, which have the firstfruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, **waiting for the adoption**, to wit, the redemption of our body.

## The New Testament Made Possible By Jesus' Blood

**Matthew 26:28** – <sup>28</sup> For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins.

**Mark 14:24** – <sup>24</sup> And he said unto them, This is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many.

## The Gift

Concerning the will that Jesus left, the Apostle Paul writes: “And for this cause he [Jesus] is the mediator of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance.” (Heb 9:15) The most important thing that Jesus left to us in his Will is his perfect character; this is the means by which we obtain eternal life. When we are judged, God sees the sinless character of Jesus Christ rather than our own sinful character.

The property left to the heirs is a free gift from the person who has died. They did not earn it. Typically a person leaves property to their blood relatives but nothing requires them to do this. Sometimes conditions are set that must be met by the heir before they receive their inheritance. These conditions do not change the fact that it is a free gift.

Jesus has given us a free gift of eternal life but there are certain conditions that must be met. These are contained throughout the New Testament. We have been studying these conditions of eternal salvation which few follow. Jesus said: “Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.” (Mt 7:13-14)

## Who Are God's Adopted Heirs

**Romans 8:13-17** – <sup>13</sup> For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live. <sup>14</sup> For **as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.** <sup>15</sup> For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father. <sup>16</sup> The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God: <sup>17</sup> And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together.

**Matthew 12:5** – <sup>48</sup> But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren? <sup>49</sup> And he stretched forth his hand toward his disciples, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren! <sup>50</sup> For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

## God's Heirs Love Him

**James 2:5** – Hearken, my beloved brethren, Hath not God chosen the poor of this world rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom which he hath promised to them that love him?

## Jesus Is God

**John 10:30** – <sup>30</sup> I and my Father are one.

**John 14:9-11** – <sup>9</sup> Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? he that hath seen me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou then, Shew us the Father? <sup>10</sup> Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works. <sup>11</sup> Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very works' sake.

## Whoever Loves Jesus Keeps His Commandments

**John 14:15** – If ye love me, **keep my commandments.**

**John 15:10** – <sup>10</sup> **If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love;** even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love.

## You Cannot Be An Heir Through Works But Only By Faith

**Romans 4:13-16** – <sup>13</sup> For the promise, that he should be the heir of the world, was not to Abraham, or to his seed, through the law, but through the righteousness of faith. <sup>14</sup> For **if they which are of the law be heirs, faith is made void, and the promise made of none effect:** <sup>15</sup> Because the law worketh wrath: for where no law is, there is no transgression. <sup>16</sup> Therefore it is of faith, that it might be by grace; to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed; not to that only which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham; who is the father of us all,

## Summary

A Testament is a legal instrument by which a person sets forth who the heirs of their property will be after their death. Further, a Testament can contain conditions by which individuals can become

heirs and also conditions by which they can be excluded as heirs. This is exactly what we find in the New Testament of the Bible.

God has predestined all of us to be heirs through adoption by Christ Jesus. But while God has predestined all of us, He has also given us free will to make our own choice. We can choose to accept Jesus Christ as our Lord and Saviour or we can reject Him. The choice is ours. When we accept Jesus Christ as our Saviour, we become adopted sons and daughters of God.

But when we accept Jesus as our Lord and Saviour, we cannot stop there. The New Testament of Jesus Christ contains many conditions that we must accept as adopted sons and daughters. Chief among these are that we must love God and if we love Him, we must keep His commandments.

While we are required to meet these conditions, we must never forget that we are saved by faith, it is a free gift. We are not able to meet any of God's conditions on our own. We can only make the choice. It is only possible through the Holy Spirit dwelling in us. Even with the Holy Spirit we fail. And it is the blood of Jesus Christ that purifies us and gives us the perfect sinless character of Jesus Christ.



# #16

## A New Covenant

Covenant and Testament come from the same Greek word which means contract. A will is a specific kind of contract. Through the New Testament we were made heirs of God through the death and resurrection of Jesus Christ. Our becoming heirs was subject to certain conditions. What we are required to do is accept the terms of God's contract.

Let's take a brief look at the Original Covenant and then we'll look at the New Covenant.

### The Original Covenant

The Old Covenant of the Old Testament was a contract between God and the nation of Israel. God agreed to bless and in return Israel agreed to obey all that God commanded. Israel broke that contract. But the Old Covenant was not designed to bring salvation. Salvation was the purpose of the New Covenant.

**Exodus 19:5-8** – <sup>5</sup> Now therefore, **if ye will obey my voice indeed, and keep my covenant**, then ye shall be a peculiar treasure unto me above all people: for all the earth is mine: <sup>6</sup> And ye shall be unto me a kingdom of priests, and an holy nation. These are the words which thou shalt speak unto the children of Israel. <sup>7</sup> And Moses came and called for the elders of the people, and laid before their faces all these words which the LORD commanded him. <sup>8</sup> And all the people answered together, and said, **All that the LORD hath spoken we will do.** And Moses returned the words of the people unto the LORD.

**Hebrews 9:1-10** – <sup>1</sup> Then verily the first covenant had also ordinances of divine service, and a worldly sanctuary. <sup>2</sup> For there was a tabernacle made; the first, wherein was the candlestick, and the table, and the shewbread; which is called the sanctuary. <sup>3</sup> And after the second veil, the tabernacle which is called the Holiest of all; <sup>4</sup> Which had the golden censer, and the ark of the covenant overlaid round about with gold, wherein was the golden pot that had manna, and Aaron's rod that budded, and the tables of the covenant; <sup>5</sup> And over it the cherubims of glory shadowing the mercyseat; of which we cannot now speak particularly. <sup>6</sup> Now when these things were thus ordained, the priests went always into the first tabernacle, accomplishing the service of God. <sup>7</sup> But into the second went the high priest alone once every year, not without blood, which he offered for himself, and for the errors of the people:

<sup>8</sup> The Holy Ghost this signifying, that the way into the holiest of all was not yet made manifest, while as the first tabernacle was yet standing: <sup>9</sup> Which was a figure for the time then present, in which were offered both gifts and sacrifices, that could not make him that did the service perfect, as pertaining to the conscience; <sup>10</sup> Which stood only in meats and drinks, and divers washings, and carnal ordinances, imposed on them until the time of reformation.

## A New Covenant Promised

**Jeremiah 31:31-34** – <sup>31</sup> Behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that **I will make a new covenant** with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah: <sup>32</sup> Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day that I took them by the hand to bring them out of the land of Egypt; which my covenant they brake, although I was an husband unto them, saith the LORD: <sup>33</sup> But this shall be the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel; After those days, saith the LORD, **I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and will be their God, and they shall be my people.** <sup>34</sup> And they shall teach no more every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the LORD: for they shall all know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith the LORD: for I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more.

**Hebrews 8:6-13** – <sup>6</sup> But now hath he obtained a more excellent ministry, by how much also he is the mediator of a better covenant, which was established upon better promises. <sup>7</sup> For if that first covenant had been faultless, then should no place have been sought for the second. <sup>8</sup> For finding fault with them, he saith, Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah: <sup>9</sup> Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt; because they continued not in my covenant, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord. <sup>10</sup> For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, saith the Lord; **I will put my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people:** <sup>11</sup> And they shall not teach every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest. <sup>12</sup> For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more. <sup>13</sup> In that he saith, A new covenant, he hath made the first old. Now that which decayeth and waxeth old is ready to vanish away.

## Jesus The Mediator

A mediator is “one who intervenes between two [parties], either in order to make or restore peace and friendship, or form a compact, or for ratifying a covenant.”

**Hebrews 12:24** – And to Jesus the **mediator** of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel.

## Jesus Our Redeemer Under The New Covenant

**Hebrews 9:11-28** – <sup>11</sup> But Christ being come an high priest of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this building; <sup>12</sup> Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us. <sup>13</sup> For if the blood of bulls and of goats, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh: <sup>14</sup> How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?

<sup>15</sup> And for this cause he is the mediator of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance. <sup>16</sup> For where a testament is, there must also of necessity be the death of the testator. <sup>17</sup> For a testament is of force after men are dead: otherwise it is of no strength at all while the testator liveth. <sup>18</sup> Whereupon neither the first testament was dedicated without blood. <sup>19</sup> For when Moses had spoken every precept to all the people according to the law, he took the blood of calves and of goats, with water, and scarlet wool, and hyssop, and sprinkled both the book, and all the people, <sup>20</sup> Saying, This is the blood of the testament which God hath enjoined unto you. <sup>21</sup> Moreover he sprinkled with blood both the tabernacle, and all the vessels of the ministry. <sup>22</sup> And almost all things are by the law purged with blood; and without shedding of blood is no remission.

<sup>23</sup> It was therefore necessary that the patterns of things in the heavens should be purified with these; but the heavenly things themselves with better sacrifices than these. <sup>24</sup> For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us: <sup>25</sup> Nor yet that he should offer himself often, as the high priest entereth into the holy place every year with blood of others; <sup>26</sup> For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself. <sup>27</sup> And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment: <sup>28</sup> So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many; and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time without sin unto salvation.

## A New Commandment

The New Commandment that Jesus gave was essentially a clarification of the purpose behind the majority of the ten commandments which was to love our neighbor. John makes this clear when he writes, "I write no new commandment unto you, but an old commandment." (1 John 2:7) Jesus also states in the Gospels of Mark and Matthew that there are essentially two commandments; these are to love God and to love our neighbor. All the other commandments are based on these two.

**John 13:34-35** – <sup>34</sup> A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. <sup>35</sup> By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.

**1 John 2:7-11** – <sup>7</sup> Brethren, I write no new commandment unto you, but an old commandment which ye had from the beginning. The old commandment is the word which ye have heard from the beginning. <sup>8</sup> Again, a new commandment I write unto you, which thing is true in him and in you: because the darkness is past, and the true light now shineth. <sup>9</sup> He that saith he is in the light, and hateth his brother, is in darkness even until now. <sup>10</sup> He that loveth his brother abideth in the light, and there is none occasion of stumbling in him. <sup>11</sup> But he that hateth his brother is in darkness, and walketh in darkness, and knoweth not whither he goeth, because that darkness hath blinded his eyes.

**Mark 12:29-31** – <sup>29</sup> And Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments is, Hear, O Israel; The Lord our God is one Lord: <sup>30</sup> And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment. <sup>31</sup> And the second is like, namely this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. There is none other commandment greater than these.

**Matthew 22:34-40** – <sup>34</sup> But when the Pharisees had heard that he had put the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered together. <sup>35</sup> Then one of them, which was a lawyer, asked him a question, tempting him, and saying, <sup>36</sup> Master, which is the great commandment in the law? <sup>37</sup> Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. <sup>38</sup> This is the first and great commandment. <sup>39</sup> And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. <sup>40</sup> On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.

**Matthew 5:27** – <sup>27</sup> Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: <sup>28</sup> But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.

## The Law Is Good

**Romans 7:12** – <sup>12</sup> Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good.

## The Law Shall Endure Forever

**Matthew 5:18** – <sup>18</sup> For verily I say unto you, **Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law**, till all be fulfilled. <sup>19</sup> Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven.

## Summary

In the agreement that Israel made with God in the old testament, they simply promised to obey him and do all that he commanded. God then gave them the ten commandments, the feast days and the temple ceremonies. Israel failed to keep their covenant with God. Israel's failure was not a surprise to God, He knew it would happen. God promised a New Covenant in which he would write his laws in our mind and in our hearts. He delivered as promised.

Jesus Christ is the mediator of the New Covenant and under this covenant He is our redeemer. Jesus paid the price for our sins through His death. Through His resurrection he conquered death. By accepting Jesus as our Saviour we can receive his perfect righteous character and thereby obtain eternal life.

Jesus never said anything that would indicate the law was done away with. In fact Jesus raised the standard for Christians. He commanded us to love God with all our heart, mind and soul. He commanded us to love our neighbor as our own self. And finally, Jesus said that if we lust after a woman we have already committed adultery. What he was saying is that sin begins in the mind and that we are accountable for not only what we do but what we think.

Many people, even Christians don't like God's law but the word of God tells us that "the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good." Therefore, it is not surprising at all that the law shall last forever. Jesus said that if you want to be considered great in the Kingdom of God, you will obey the law and teach others to do the same.

# #17

## The New Covenant & Obedience

A covenant is a contract. Under United States law, both parties must offer consideration under a covenant or contract in order for it to be valid and enforceable. Consideration is something of value; it can be tangible as in money or property or intangible such as a promise to fulfill some form of service. Someone cannot create a contract to give something of value to another unless the recipient gives something in return. In the situation where one wishes to give a gift, typically the contract will state, for an in consideration of the sum of \$1.00...

For example, for and in consideration of the sum of \$1.00, Mr. John Doe sells to XYZ Church 40 acres of land. Although there must be consideration, the consideration does not have to be fair compensation. In the example above, the 40 acres of land could be worth \$10 million. The land is a gift but consideration is required to make it legal and binding. Under the Original Covenant, the consideration that Israel gave God was their promise to obey.

In order for a contract to be enforceable, both parties must fulfill their responsibilities or promises under the contract. If someone promised to give you something and didn't fulfill that promise, you have no recourse unless you have a contract. If you went to court, the judge would ask what you promised to give in return. When you said nothing, the judge would throw your case out of court. A promise is not enforceable under the law unless there is a contract and consideration. Both parties must offer something of value.

It is important to remember that most contracts have multiple clauses and that none of them stands alone. You cannot just pick out the clauses you like and ignore all the rest. As I am writing this introduction in early 2008, the USA is embroiled in a mortgage crisis. There are multiple reasons for this. Mortgage teaser rates are one of the causes of this crisis. Many people qualified for their mortgages based on artificially low interest rates. These rates eventually adjusted to higher rates that resulted in larger monthly payments which many people were unable to make. This has resulted in many foreclosures and a nationwide financial crisis.

It would appear that both lenders and borrowers tended to focus on the benefits of the lower teaser rates. It seems they ignored the consequences that would result when the rates adjusted upward. It would appear that both parties focused on the clauses of the mortgage contract that benefited them. At the same time, they ignored the possible consequence that could result from those clauses associated with increases in interest rates.

People tend to do this with the word of God as well. Many find a passage they like and then ignore other texts on the same subject. Often other texts give deeper meaning and/or further instruction. Alternatively, many take a text out of context and then ignore other scriptures that would reveal that their favorite text is being used incorrectly.

Let us examine God's New Covenant with care and thoroughness. Let us examine God's New Covenant in its entirety so that we are sure to receive the eternal benefits promised. Under the Old Covenant God required Israel to give consideration. They were required to obey all that God commanded. Let us see if this rule of law holds true under the New Covenant. More specifically, are we required by God to give something of value to seal his New Covenant agreement with us?

## Abraham Was Accounted Righteous Through His Faith

**Romans 4:13** – <sup>13</sup> For the promise, that he should be the heir of the world, was not to Abraham, or to his seed, through the law, but **through the righteousness of faith.**

## Abraham's Obedience Was Accounted As Faith

You show your faith or belief through your actions. Abraham truly believed what God told him. He showed his belief or faith through what he did; he obeyed God.

**Hebrews 11:8-9** – <sup>8</sup> **By faith Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed;** and he went out, not knowing whither he went. <sup>9</sup> **By faith he sojourned in the land of promise,** as in a strange country, dwelling in tabernacles with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise:

## The Importance of Obedience Under The New Covenant

**John 14:15** – If ye love me, **keep my commandments.**

**John 15:10** – <sup>10</sup> **If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love;** even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love.

**1 John 3:9** – <sup>9</sup> **Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin;** for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.

**1 John 5:1-5** – <sup>1</sup> Whosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ is born of God: and every one that loveth him that begat loveth him also that is begotten of him. <sup>2</sup> **By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God, and keep his commandments.** <sup>3</sup> For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments: and his commandments are not grievous. <sup>4</sup> For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith. <sup>5</sup> Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God?

**Romans 1:3-5** – <sup>3</sup> Concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, which was made of the seed of David according to the flesh; <sup>4</sup> And declared to be the Son of God with power, according to the spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead: <sup>5</sup> By whom we have received grace and apostleship, **for obedience to the faith** among all nations, for his name:

**Romans 16:25-27** – <sup>25</sup> Now to him that is of power to stablish you according to my gospel, and the preaching of Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of the mystery, which was kept secret since the world began, <sup>26</sup> But now is made manifest, and by the scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations **for the obedience of faith:** <sup>27</sup> To God only wise, be glory through Jesus Christ for ever. Amen.

**Acts 6:7** – And the word of God increased; and the number of the disciples multiplied in Jerusalem greatly; and **a great company of the priests were obedient to the faith.**

## **If You Do Not Keep The Commandments – You Do Not Love Christ**

**John 14:24** – <sup>24</sup> He that loveth me not keepeth not my sayings: and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's which sent me.

## **Unrepented Sin Is Not Forgiven**

**Luke 13:3** – <sup>3</sup> I tell you, Nay: but, **except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.**

**1 John 3:8** – <sup>8</sup> He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.

**Romans 6:16** – <sup>16</sup> Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?

**Hebrews 10:26-28** – **For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins,** But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries. He that despised Moses' law died without mercy under two or three witnesses.

**Romans 8:13** – <sup>13</sup> For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live.

## **The Blood of Jesus Cleanses Us From The Sin We Hate**

**Roman 7:12-25** – <sup>12</sup> Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good. <sup>13</sup> Was then that which is good made death unto me? God forbid. But sin, that it might appear sin, working death in me by that which is good; that sin by the commandment might become exceeding sinful. <sup>14</sup> For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin. <sup>15</sup> For that which I do I allow not: for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I. <sup>16</sup> If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto the law that it is good. <sup>17</sup> Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. <sup>18</sup> For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not. <sup>19</sup> For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do. <sup>20</sup> Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. <sup>21</sup> I find then a law, that, when I would do good, evil is present with me. <sup>22</sup> For I delight in the law of God after the inward man: <sup>23</sup> But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members. <sup>24</sup> O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death? <sup>25</sup> I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin.

## **Jesus – The Heir of All Things**

**Hebrews 1:2** – Hath in these last days spoken unto us by **his Son, whom he hath appointed heir**

of all things, by whom also he made the worlds;

## The Heirs of God

**Titus 3:7** – That being justified by his grace, **we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life.**

**Romans 8:14-17** – <sup>14</sup> **For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.** <sup>15</sup> For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father. <sup>16</sup> The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God: <sup>17</sup> **And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ;** if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together.

**Matthew 12:50** – <sup>50</sup> For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

## An Oath Made By God

God has made an oath or promise to those who would be heirs. This promise is made in his new covenant.

**Hebrews 6:17** – Wherein **God, willing more abundantly to shew unto the heirs of promise** the immutability of his counsel, **confirmed it by an oath:**

## Christ's Followers Are Obedient To Their Faith

**Romans 1:4-5** – By whom we have received grace and apostleship, **for obedience to the faith** among all nations, for his name:

**Romans 16:26** – <sup>26</sup> But now is made manifest, and by the scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations **for the obedience of faith:**

## Entering The New Covenant

Under the New Covenant God has written His law on each of our hearts. When we accept Jesus as our Lord and Savior, we enter the New Covenant with God. Under this covenant, God washes away our sins and gives us the free gift of eternal life. There is nothing we can do to erase our sins or earn our salvation; it is plain and simply a free gift. In spite of this, we must give consideration under our contract (covenant) with God. We must agree that His law is good and holy and we must agree to obey it.

Abraham's obedience was critical to the covenant that God made with him. In the covenant that God made with Israel, He asked them to obey. Under the New Covenant God is asking us to obey as well. The Apostle James wrote that the promise of being heirs of God's kingdom has been made to those who love Christ. He writes: "Hearken, my beloved brethren, Hath not God chosen the poor of



this world rich in faith, and **heirs of the kingdom which he hath promised to them that love him?** (James 2:5) Jesus said that if we love him we will keep his commandments (John 14:15). He also said that God loves and abides with those who keep His commandments: **“If a man love me, he will keep my words:** and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him.” (John 14:23) Jesus further made clear that those who do not keep His commandment do not love Him. He said: “He that loveth me not keepeth not my sayings:” (John 14:24)

The wonders of God are past understanding. We are totally incapable of fulfilling our contractual obligations under the New Covenant. Yet, although we are incapable of fulfilling our obligation, the blood of Christ sets us free. God imputes on us the sinless character of Jesus Christ when we accept Jesus as our Saviour, confess our sins and repent. 2000 years ago Jesus fulfilled our obligation under the contract when He lived a sinless life. After having lived a perfect sinless life, Jesus paid the penalty for our sin. When Jesus died on the cross, He took our place and suffered our punishment.

Although the righteousness of Christ is a free gift, we must consent that the law is good and we must do our best to obey God's law. We must confess our sins and repent. When we repent, we make a decision to amend or change our sinful behavior. Finally, since we are incapable of perfectly keeping God's law, we must seek God's help. It is only through the indwelling Holy Spirit that we can overcome our sinful nature.

The Apostle Paul admitted that he had a problem with sin and that he could not perfectly keep the law. But Paul loved the law and hated sin. Paul desired with all his heart to do what was right at all times but he was incapable. Paul hated his sin and was greatly grieved at his inability to keep the law perfectly (see Romans 7:14-25). It is important to note that Paul was a godly man. He wrote: “For if we sin willfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins, But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries. He that despised Moses' law died without mercy under two or three witnesses” (Hebrews 10:26-28). It is obvious that Paul didn't have a problem with the commandments. Therefore, his problem was his inability to show perfect love and perfect obedience to what God called him to do each day.

We must consider Paul as a great example of an imperfect man. But we need to have the mind of Christ and the strength that comes from His indwelling Holy Spirit. This comes from developing a relationship with God. Important elements of this are prayer, Bible study and worship.

## Summary

A covenant is a contract and under U.S. law both parties must provide consideration which is something of value. We find the same elements under God's New Covenant. The subject of the covenant is our Salvation. We need to be saved because we have sinned and the punishment sin is eternal death. God promises to write his law on our hearts rather than on just stone or paper. The Holy Spirit writes God's law on our hearts when we agree with God to obey His laws and when we accept Jesus as our savior, confess our sins and repent. When we do this, we become partakers of the New Covenant.

The New Covenant does not eliminate our responsibility to obey God! The New Covenant is more a fulfillment of the promise in the Old Covenant. Under the New Covenant we are still required to obey God. So what changed? The New Covenant is designed to accomplish what the Old Covenant could not accomplish, this is our eternal salvation.

Under the New Covenant God provided a provision for our inability to keep his law, he provided his son Jesus Christ as a sacrifice for our sins. The sacrificial offerings of the Old Covenant could never

atone for a persons sins, they were only a symbol of the sacrifice that would be made by Jesus Christ.

The New Covenant has done away with some of the ceremonial obligations in the Old Covenant. Paul talks about the changes in Hebrews 9. He notes certain ceremonial laws which have been done away with. These ceremonies were designed to reveal Jesus as the Messiah and are no longer necessary. Please note, not everything has changed. The only changes are those which are specifically mentioned.

Those things which were done away with include: the earthly sanctuary, the holy items in the sanctuary and the sanctuary services. These were all images or symbols of Christs sacrifice, resurrection and the ministry that he now conducts in the heavenly sanctuary. Paul explains that the sanctuary services were performed "until the time of reformation." (Hebrews 9:10) The death and resurrection of Jesus began the reformation and ushered in the New Covenant.

Now, many say that the law has been done away with and we have no obligation to keep the law. This is not true. Jesus says the law will last for ever: "For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled." (Matthew 5:18) He also commanded us to love God. He further commanded: "If you love me, keep my commandments." Do you think there will be anyone in heaven who doesn't love Jesus?

Paul made it clear that Jesus saves us from the sin we hate (Romans 7:14-25). It is also clear from scripture that sin which has not been repented of is unforgivin sin.

Those who have been saved are heirs of God and these heirs are led by the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit will lead us in to all truth and righteousness, it will never lead us into sin. Paul writes that as Christians "we have received grace and apostleship, for obedience to the faith." (Romans 1:5) What Paul is saying is that our faith is evidenced by our obedience. And without faith, we cannot be saved.

# #18

## The Sovereignty of God

God is good, holy and righteous; his ways are perfect and true. All power is in His hands. He has given free-will to man that we may choose to do good or evil. But whether we choose to good or evil, God will use us to achieve His purposes on the earth. God knows the future, He knows our heart and our desires. He knows what motivates us. Therefore, whether we are good or evil, God can use us to achieve His purposes.

### God Is Good

**Psalm 25:8-10** – <sup>8</sup> Good and upright is the LORD: therefore will he teach sinners in the way. <sup>9</sup> The meek will he guide in judgment: and the meek will he teach his way. <sup>10</sup> All the paths of the LORD are mercy and truth unto such as keep his covenant and his testimonies.

**Psalm 34:8** – O taste and see that the LORD is good: blessed is the man that trusteth in him.

**Matthew 19:17** – And he said unto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, that is, God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments.

### God Is Holy

**Isaiah 43:3** – For I am the LORD thy God, the Holy One of Israel, thy Saviour...

**Revelation 4:8** – And the four beasts had each of them six wings about him; and they were full of eyes within: and they rest not day and night, saying, Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come.

**Isaiah 48:17** – Thus saith the LORD, thy Redeemer, the Holy One of Israel; I am the LORD thy God which teacheth thee to profit, which leadeth thee by the way that thou shouldest go.

**Ezekiel 39:7** – So will I make my holy name known in the midst of my people Israel; and I will not let them pollute my holy name any more: and the heathen shall know that I am the LORD, the Holy One in Israel.

**Ezekiel 36:19-20** – <sup>19</sup> And I scattered them among the heathen, and they were dispersed through the countries: according to their way and according to their doings I judged them. <sup>20</sup> And when they entered unto the heathen, whither they went, they profaned my holy name, when they said to them, These are the people of the LORD, and are gone forth out of his land.

**Revelation 6:10** – And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?

## God Is Righteous

**Psalm 116:5** – Gracious is the LORD, and righteous; yea, our God is merciful.

**Psalm 119:137-138** – <sup>137</sup> TZADDI. Righteous art thou, O LORD, and upright are thy judgments.  
<sup>138</sup> Thy testimonies that thou hast commanded are righteous and very faithful.

**Psalm 129:4** – The LORD is righteous: he hath cut asunder the cords of the wicked.

**Psalm 145:17** – The LORD is righteous in all his ways, and holy in all his works.

**Ezra 9:15** – O LORD God of Israel, thou art righteous: for we remain yet escaped, as it is this day: behold, we are before thee in our trespasses: for we cannot stand before thee because of this.

**Daniel 9:14** – Therefore hath the LORD watched upon the evil, and brought it upon us: for the LORD our God is righteous in all his works which he doeth: for we obeyed not his voice.

**2 Thessalonians 1:5-6** – <sup>5</sup> Which is a manifest token of the righteous judgment of God, that ye may be counted worthy of the kingdom of God, for which ye also suffer: <sup>6</sup> Seeing it is a righteous thing with God to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you;

**Exodus 9:27** – And Pharaoh sent, and called for Moses and Aaron, and said unto them, I have sinned this time: the LORD is righteous, and I and my people are wicked.

**Revelation 16:7** – And I heard another out of the altar say, Even so, Lord God Almighty, true and righteous are thy judgments.

## God Is The Creator

**Genesis 1:1-5** – <sup>1</sup> In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. <sup>2</sup> And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. <sup>3</sup> And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. <sup>4</sup> And God saw the light, that it was good: and God divided the light from the darkness. <sup>5</sup> And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day.

**Genesis 1:26-27** – <sup>26</sup> And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. <sup>27</sup> So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them.

**Isaiah 45:5-7** – <sup>5</sup> I am the LORD, and there is none else, there is no God beside me: I girded thee, though thou hast not known me: <sup>6</sup> That they may know from the rising of the sun, and from the west, that there is none beside me. I am the LORD, and there is none else. <sup>7</sup> I form the light, and create darkness: I make peace, and create evil: I the LORD do all these things.

## God Has Infinite Power

**Romans 13:1** – Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God.

**Genesis 1:3** – And God said, Let there be light: and there was light.

**Psalms 115:3** – But our God is in the heavens: he hath done whatsoever he hath pleased.

**Isaiah 40:28-29** – <sup>28</sup> Hast thou not known? hast thou not heard, that the everlasting God, the LORD, the Creator of the ends of the earth, fainteth not, neither is weary? there is no searching of his understanding. <sup>29</sup> He giveth power to the faint; and to them that have no might he increaseth strength.

**Genesis 17:1** – And when Abram was ninety years old and nine, the LORD appeared to Abram, and said unto him, **I am the Almighty God**; walk before me, and be thou perfect.

**Daniel 4:35** – <sup>35</sup> And all the inhabitants of the earth are reputed as nothing: and he doeth according to his will in the army of heaven, and among the inhabitants of the earth: and none can stay his hand, or say unto him, What doest thou?

## God Knows All

**Isaiah 40:12-14** – <sup>12</sup> Who hath measured the waters in the hollow of his hand, and meted out heaven with the span, and comprehended the dust of the earth in a measure, and weighed the mountains in scales, and the hills in a balance? <sup>13</sup> Who hath directed the Spirit of the LORD, or being his counsellor hath taught him? <sup>14</sup> With whom took he counsel, and who instructed him, and taught him in the path of judgment, and taught him knowledge, and shewed to him the way of understanding?

**Colossians 2:1-3** – <sup>1</sup> For I would that ye knew what great conflict I have for you, and for them at Laodicea, and for as many as have not seen my face in the flesh; <sup>2</sup> That their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in love, and unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgement of the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ; <sup>3</sup> In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.

**1 Corinthians 2:9-13** – <sup>9</sup> But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him. <sup>10</sup> But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God. <sup>11</sup> For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God. <sup>12</sup> Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God. <sup>13</sup> Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual.

## God's Presence Is Everywhere

**Jeremiah 23:23-24** – <sup>23</sup> Am I a God at hand, saith the LORD, and not a God afar off? <sup>24</sup> Can any hide himself in secret places that I shall not see him? saith the LORD. Do not I fill heaven and earth? saith the LORD.

**Matthew 18:20** – <sup>20</sup> For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

**Jeremiah 139:7-12** – <sup>7</sup> Whither shall I go from thy spirit? or whither shall I flee from thy

presence? <sup>8</sup> If I ascend up into heaven, thou art there: if I make my bed in hell, behold, thou art there. <sup>9</sup> If I take the wings of the morning, and dwell in the uttermost parts of the sea; <sup>10</sup> Even there shall thy hand lead me, and thy right hand shall hold me. <sup>11</sup> If I say, Surely the darkness shall cover me; even the night shall be light about me. <sup>12</sup> Yea, the darkness hideth not from thee; but the night shineth as the day: the darkness and the light are both alike to thee.

## God Desires The Salvation of All

**Ephesians 1:3-14** – <sup>3</sup> Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ: <sup>4</sup> According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: <sup>5</sup> Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, <sup>6</sup> To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved. <sup>7</sup> In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace; <sup>8</sup> Wherein he hath abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence; <sup>9</sup> Having made known unto us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure which he hath purposed in himself: <sup>10</sup> That in the dispensation of the fulness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; even in him: <sup>11</sup> In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will: <sup>12</sup> That we should be to the praise of his glory, who first trusted in Christ. <sup>13</sup> In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise, <sup>14</sup> Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory.

**Romans 8:29-30** – <sup>29</sup> For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren. <sup>30</sup> Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.

**2 Peter 3:9** – <sup>9</sup> The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.

## God Gives Us Freedom to Choose

**Deuteronomy 30:19-20** – <sup>19</sup> I call heaven and earth to record this day against you, that I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing: therefore choose life, that both thou and thy seed may live: <sup>20</sup> That thou mayest love the LORD thy God, and that thou mayest obey his voice, and that thou mayest cleave unto him: for he is thy life, and the length of thy days: that thou mayest dwell in the land which the LORD sware unto thy fathers, to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob, to give them.

**Joshua 24:15** – And if it seem evil unto you to serve the LORD, choose you this day whom ye will serve; whether the gods which your fathers served that were on the other side of the flood, or the gods of the Amorites, in whose land ye dwell: but as for me and my house, we will serve the LORD.

## God Is Creator of The Righteous And Unrighteous

**Proverbs 16:4** – The LORD hath made all things for himself: yea, even the wicked for the day of evil.

**Romans 9:14-24** – <sup>14</sup> What shall we say then? Is there unrighteousness with God? God forbid. <sup>15</sup> For he saith to Moses, I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion. <sup>16</sup> So then it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercy. <sup>17</sup> For the scripture saith unto Pharaoh, Even for this same purpose have I raised thee up, that I might shew my power in thee, and that my name might be declared throughout all the earth. <sup>18</sup> Therefore hath he mercy on whom he will have mercy, and whom he will he hardeneth. <sup>19</sup> Thou wilt say then unto me, Why doth he yet find fault? For who hath resisted his will? <sup>20</sup> Nay but, O man, who art thou that repliest against God? Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus? <sup>21</sup> Hath not the potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour? <sup>22</sup> What if God, willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction: <sup>23</sup> And that he might make known the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy, which he had afore prepared unto glory, <sup>24</sup> Even us, whom he hath called, not of the Jews only, but also of the Gentiles?

## God's Ways Are Perfect

**Deuteronomy 32:3-4** – <sup>3</sup> Because I will publish the name of the LORD: ascribe ye greatness unto our God. <sup>4</sup> He is the Rock, his work is perfect: for all his ways are judgment: a God of truth and without iniquity, just and right is he.

**2 Samuel 2:31** – As for God, his way is perfect; the word of the LORD is tried: he is a buckler to all them that trust in him.

**Psalms 18:30-32** – <sup>30</sup> As for God, his way is perfect: the word of the LORD is tried: he is a buckler to all those that trust in him. <sup>31</sup> For who is God save the LORD? or who is a rock save our God? <sup>32</sup> It is God that girdeth me with strength, and maketh my way perfect.

## God's Ways Are Much Different Than Man's Ways

**Isaiah 55:8-9** – <sup>8</sup> For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways, saith the LORD. <sup>9</sup> For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts than your thoughts.

**Psalms 119:27** – Make me to understand the way of thy precepts: so shall I talk of thy wondrous works.

## God Knows And Controls The Future

**Isaiah 46:9-10** – <sup>9</sup> Remember the former things of old: for I am God, and there is none else; I am

God, and there is none like me, <sup>10</sup> Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times the things that are not yet done, saying, My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure:

## **God Brings His Word To Pass**

**Jeremiah 1:12** – Then said the LORD unto me, Thou hast well seen: for I will hasten my word to perform it.

**Isaiah 54:16-17** – <sup>16</sup> Behold, I have created the smith that bloweth the coals in the fire, and that bringeth forth an instrument for his work; and I have created the waster to destroy. <sup>17</sup> No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper; and every tongue that shall rise against thee in judgment thou shalt condemn. This is the heritage of the servants of the LORD, and their righteousness is of me, saith the LORD.

## **God Is In Control Of All Things**

**John 3:27** – John answered and said, A man can receive nothing, except it be given him from heaven.

**Daniel 9:35** – And all the inhabitants of the earth are reputed as nothing: and he doeth according to his will in the army of heaven, and among the inhabitants of the earth: and none can stay his hand, or say unto him, What doest thou?

**Genesis 50:20** – But as for you, ye thought evil against me; but God meant it unto good, to bring to pass, as it is this day, to save much people alive.

**Proverbs 16:9** - A man's heart deviseth his way: but the LORD directeth his steps.

## **God Will Bring Good Out Of Every Situation In The Life of His Faithful**

**Romans 8:28** – <sup>28</sup> And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose.

## **God Sets Up The Rulers of This World**

**Romans 13:1** – Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God.

**Daniel 2:20-21** – <sup>20</sup> Daniel answered and said, Blessed be the name of God for ever and ever: for wisdom and might are his: <sup>21</sup> And he changeth the times and the seasons: he removeth kings, and setteth up kings: he giveth wisdom unto the wise, and knowledge to them that know understanding:

**Daniel 4:17** – This matter is by the decree of the watchers, and the demand by the word of the holy ones: to the intent that the living may know that the most High ruleth in the kingdom of men, and giveth it to whomsoever he will, and setteth up over it the basest of men.



**Daniel 4:25** – ...the most High ruleth in the kingdom of men, and giveth it to whomsoever he will.

## **God Uses The Rulers of This World To Achieve His Purposes**

**Proverbs 21:1** – The king's heart is in the hand of the LORD, as the rivers of water: he turneth it whithersoever he will.

**Acts 4:26-28** – <sup>26</sup> The kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord, and against his Christ. <sup>27</sup> For of a truth against thy holy child Jesus, whom thou hast anointed, both Herod, and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles, and the people of Israel, were gathered together, <sup>28</sup> For to do whatsoever thy hand and thy counsel determined before to be done.

## **God Uses Both The Righteous and Unrighteous To Achieve His Purposes**

**Philippians 2:13** – For it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure.

**Ephesians 1:11** – In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will:

**Romans 9:21-22** – <sup>21</sup> Hath not the potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour? <sup>22</sup> What if God, willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction:

## **All Things Are Of God**

**1 Corinthians 11:12** – For as the woman is of the man, even so is the man also by the woman; but all things of God.

**John 19:10-11** – <sup>10</sup> Then saith Pilate unto him, Speakest thou not unto me? knowest thou not that I have power to crucify thee, and have power to release thee? <sup>11</sup> Jesus answered, Thou couldest have no power at all against me, except it were given thee from above: therefore he that delivered me unto thee hath the greater sin.

**2 Corinthians 5:18** – <sup>18</sup> And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation;

## **The Giver of Gifts**

**1 Corinthians 12:4-11** – <sup>4</sup> Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit. <sup>5</sup> And there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord. <sup>6</sup> And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God which worketh all in all. <sup>7</sup> But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal. <sup>8</sup> For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit; <sup>9</sup> To another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit; <sup>10</sup> To another the working of miracles; to another prophecy; to another discerning of spirits; to another

divers kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues: <sup>11</sup> But all these worketh that one and the selfsame Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will.

## **God's Faithful Shall Be Persecuted**

**2 Timothy 3:12** – Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution.

**1 Peter 4:12-14** – <sup>12</sup> Beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you: <sup>13</sup> But rejoice, inasmuch as ye are partakers of Christ's sufferings; that, when his glory shall be revealed, ye may be glad also with exceeding joy. <sup>14</sup> If ye be reproached for the name of Christ, happy are ye; for the spirit of glory and of God resteth upon you: on their part he is evil spoken of, but on your part he is glorified.

**Matthew 24:9** – Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake.

**Revelation 13:7** – And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations.

**Revelation 13:11-17** – <sup>11</sup> And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth; and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon. <sup>12</sup> And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed. <sup>13</sup> And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men, <sup>14</sup> And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast; saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live. <sup>15</sup> And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed. <sup>16</sup> And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: <sup>17</sup> And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.

## **Persecution of The Faithful Brings Forth The Fruit of Righteousness**

**Hebrews 12:6-11** – <sup>6</sup> For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth. <sup>7</sup> If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not? <sup>8</sup> But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons. <sup>9</sup> Furthermore we have had fathers of our flesh which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live? <sup>10</sup> For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness. <sup>11</sup> Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby.

**Philippians 1:12-14** – <sup>12</sup> But I would ye should understand, brethren, that the things which happened unto me have fallen out rather unto the furtherance of the gospel; <sup>13</sup> So that my bonds in

Christ are manifest in all the palace, and in all other places; <sup>14</sup> And many of the brethren in the Lord, waxing confident by my bonds, are much more bold to speak the word without fear.

## God Protects His Faithful

**Psalm 91:11-16** – <sup>11</sup> For he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways. <sup>12</sup> They shall bear thee up in their hands, lest thou dash thy foot against a stone. <sup>13</sup> Thou shalt tread upon the lion and adder: the young lion and the dragon shalt thou trample under feet. <sup>14</sup> Because he hath set his love upon me, therefore will I deliver him: I will set him on high, because he hath known my name. <sup>15</sup> He shall call upon me, and I will answer him: I will be with him in trouble; I will deliver him, and honour him. <sup>16</sup> With long life will I satisfy him, and shew him my salvation.

**Romans 8:31** – What shall we then say to these things? If God be for us, who can be against us?

**Philippians 4:6-7** – <sup>6</sup> Be careful for nothing; but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God. <sup>7</sup> And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus.

## All Power Has Been Given To Jesus

**Matthew 28:18** – And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth.

## God Will Judge The Wicked

**Psalm 1:4-6** – <sup>4</sup> The ungodly are not so: but are like the chaff which the wind driveth away. <sup>5</sup> Therefore the ungodly shall not stand in the judgment, nor sinners in the congregation of the righteous. <sup>6</sup> For the LORD knoweth the way of the righteous: but the way of the ungodly shall perish.

**Psalm 37:28** – <sup>28</sup> For the LORD loveth judgment, and forsaketh not his saints; they are preserved for ever: but the seed of the wicked shall be cut off.

**Psalm 9:17** – The wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the nations that forget God.

**Romans 2:5-9** – <sup>5</sup> But after thy hardness and impenitent heart treasurest up unto thyself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God; <sup>6</sup> Who will render to every man according to his deeds: <sup>7</sup> To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honour and immortality, eternal life: <sup>8</sup> But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation and wrath, <sup>9</sup> Tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that doeth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile;

**1 John 3:15** – Whosoever hateth his brother is a murderer: and ye know that no murderer hath eternal life abiding in him.

**1 Corinthians 6:9-10** – <sup>9</sup> Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of

themselves with mankind, <sup>10</sup> Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.

**Revelation 20:15** – <sup>15</sup> And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.

## Summary

God is all powerful, He is the creator, He is all knowing and omnipresent; He is everywhere. All things are under God's control. He is the Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. God knows the future and controls it; He brings His word to pass in the world.

God's ways are much different than the ways of man; God's ways are perfect. God is love. He is merciful; He is good; He is holy; He is righteous; He is the giver of gifts; He is our protector, our provider and the giver of our salvation.

God desires the salvation of everyone in the world but He has given us freewill. We each have the choice of good or evil; eternal life or eternal damnation. No matter what we choose God can and will use us to achieve his purposes in the world.

God will use each of us for good or evil. God has set up the rulers of this world to achieve His purposes. God does not control our decisions but He knows what they will be and he knows the eventual outcome. God doesn't create evil but he creates men and women who choose to be evil.

The most evil people who have existed on this earth had made it very clear that evil exists and what the consequences are. Evil reveals the goodness and holiness of God and His law. Extreme evil causes people to make a decision for God or Satan.

In the end of time, extreme evil will cause the whole world to make a decision to be on the side of God or on the side of Satan. Once everyone has made their decision, God will come and put an end to sin and rebellion. God's righteous followers will receive their reward. Then God will judge the wicked, all those who have rejected Him and who have chosen to serve Satan.

**Praise God for His Love; His Mercy and his Grace!**

# #19

## God's Purpose For Our Lives

God has a common purpose for our lives. After we have fulfilled our common purpose, God has an individual calling on each of our lives. As you shall see, you will learn God's purpose for your life in the same way that Jesus and the prophets did. You can learn God's purpose for your life by getting to know God, by prayer, by learning to hear God's voice and by yielding yourself to His will.

### God Wants Everyone To Be Saved

**Ephesians 1:3-7** – <sup>3</sup> Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ: <sup>4</sup> According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: <sup>5</sup> Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, <sup>6</sup> To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved. <sup>7</sup> In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace;

**Romans 8:29-30** - <sup>29</sup> For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren. <sup>30</sup> Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.

**Romans 8:32** - He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him also freely give us all things?

**Matthew 18:11** – [Jesus said:] For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost.

**2 Peter 3:9** – The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.

### Many People Choose Not To Be Saved

**Matthew 7:14** – [Jesus said:] Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.

**Matthew 7:21-23** – <sup>21</sup> Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. <sup>22</sup> Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? <sup>23</sup> And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.

**Hebrews 4:2** – For unto us was the gospel preached, as well as unto them: but the word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in them that heard it.

## What Is God's Purpose For Us

**Philippians 2:13** – For it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure.

**John 15:1-8** – <sup>1</sup> I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. <sup>2</sup> Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit. <sup>3</sup> Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you. <sup>4</sup> Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me. <sup>5</sup> I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing. <sup>6</sup> If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned. <sup>7</sup> If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you. <sup>8</sup> Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples.

**Jeremiah 9:23-24** – <sup>23</sup> Thus saith the LORD, Let not the wise man glory in his wisdom, neither let the mighty man glory in his might, let not the rich man glory in his riches: <sup>24</sup> But let him that glorieth glory in this, that he understandeth and knoweth me, that I am the LORD which exercise lovingkindness, judgment, and righteousness, in the earth: for in these things I delight, saith the LORD.

**John 15:15** – Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you.

**Psalms 23:3** – He restoreth my soul: he leadeth me in the paths of righteousness for his name's sake.

**Isaiah 61:3** – To appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that he might be glorified.

**Philippians 1:9-11** – <sup>9</sup> And this I pray, that your love may abound yet more and more in knowledge and in all judgment; <sup>10</sup> That ye may approve things that are excellent; that ye may be sincere and without offence till the day of Christ; <sup>11</sup> Being filled with the fruits of righteousness, which are by Jesus Christ, unto the glory and praise of God.

## How Did Jesus Fulfill God's Purpose

**John 5:19-20** – <sup>19</sup> Then answered Jesus and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise. <sup>20</sup> For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him all things that himself doeth: and he will shew him greater works than these, that ye may marvel.

**John 8:28-29** – <sup>28</sup> Then said Jesus unto them, When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am he, and that I do nothing of myself; but as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things. <sup>29</sup> And he that sent me is with me: the Father hath not left me alone; for I do always those things that please him.

**John 14:8-11** – <sup>8</sup> Philip saith unto him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us. <sup>9</sup> Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? he that hath seen

me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou then, Shew us the Father? <sup>10</sup> Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works. <sup>11</sup> Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very works' sake.

**John 10:30-33** – <sup>30</sup> I and my Father are one. <sup>31</sup> Then the Jews took up stones again to stone him. <sup>32</sup> Jesus answered them, Many good works have I shewed you from my Father; for which of those works do ye stone me? <sup>33</sup> The Jews answered him, saying, For a good work we stone thee not; but for blasphemy; and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God.

**Mark 1:35** – And in the morning, rising up a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed.

**Luke 22:39-43** – <sup>39</sup> And he came out, and went, as he was wont, to the mount of Olives; and his disciples also followed him. <sup>40</sup> And when he was at the place, he said unto them, Pray that ye enter not into temptation. <sup>41</sup> And he was withdrawn from them about a stone's cast, and kneeled down, and prayed, <sup>42</sup> Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me: nevertheless not my will, but thine, be done. <sup>43</sup> And there appeared an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him.

## Faithful Patriarchs and Prophets

**Psalms 37:23** – The steps of a good man are ordered by the LORD: and he delighteth in his way.

**Genesis 5:24** – And Enoch walked with God: and he was not; for God took him.

**Hebrews 11:5** – By faith Enoch was translated that he should not see death; and was not found, because God had translated him: for before his translation he had this testimony, that he pleased God.

**Genesis 6:9** – These are the generations of Noah: Noah was a just man and perfect in his generations, and Noah walked with God.

**Job 1:8** – And the LORD said unto Satan, Hast thou considered my servant Job, that there is none like him in the earth, a perfect and an upright man, one that feareth God, and escheweth evil?

**Hebrews 11:8-10** – <sup>8</sup> By faith Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out, not knowing whither he went. <sup>9</sup> By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange country, dwelling in tabernacles with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise: <sup>10</sup> For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God.

**Hebrews 11:24-26** – <sup>24</sup> By faith Moses, when he was come to years, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter; <sup>25</sup> Choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season; <sup>26</sup> Esteeming the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures in Egypt: for he had respect unto the recompence of the reward.

**Psalms 5:1-3** – <sup>1</sup> Give ear to my words, O LORD, consider my meditation. <sup>2</sup> Hearken unto the voice of my cry, my King, and my God: for unto thee will I pray. <sup>3</sup> My voice shalt thou hear in the morning, O LORD; in the morning will I direct my prayer unto thee, and will look up.

**Matthew 11:11** – Verily I say unto you, Among them that are born of women there hath not risen

a greater than John the Baptist: notwithstanding he that is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he.

## Discerning God's Will

**Isaiah 30:21** – And thine ears shall hear a word behind thee, saying, This is the way, walk ye in it, when ye turn to the right hand, and when ye turn to the left.

**Proverbs 3:5-6** – <sup>5</sup> Trust in the LORD with all thine heart; and lean not unto thine own understanding. <sup>6</sup> In all thy ways acknowledge him, and he shall direct thy paths.

**Psalms 119:105** – Thy word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path.

**Acts 8:26** – And the angel of the Lord spake unto Philip, saying, Arise, and go toward the south unto the way that goeth down from Jerusalem unto Gaza, which is desert.

## Discerning God's Voice

**Luke 4:4** – And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written, That man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God.

**Isaiah 8:20** – To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, it is because there is no light in them.

**1 John 4:1-3** – <sup>1</sup> Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world. <sup>2</sup> Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ **is come in the flesh** is of God: <sup>3</sup> And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ **is come in the flesh** is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world.

## Advise To God's Faithful

**Joshua 1:8** – This book of the law shall not depart out of thy mouth; but thou shalt meditate therein day and night, that thou mayest observe to do according to all that is written therein: for then thou shalt make thy way prosperous, and then thou shalt have good success.

**Leviticus 18:1** - Ye shall do my judgments, and keep mine ordinances, to walk therein: I am the LORD your God.

**Deuteronomy 8:6** – Therefore thou shalt keep the commandments of the LORD thy God, to walk in his ways, and to fear him.

**Deuteronomy 13:2** – Ye shall walk after the LORD your God, and fear him, and keep his commandments, and obey his voice, and ye shall serve him, and cleave unto him.

**John 14:15** – If ye love me, keep my commandments.

**James 1:22** – But be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving your own selves.



**1 John 5:3-5** – <sup>3</sup> For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments: and his commandments are not grievous. <sup>4</sup> For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith. <sup>5</sup> Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God?

**Matthew 6:6-8** – But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly. <sup>7</sup> But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. <sup>8</sup> Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him.

**Philippians 4:6** – Be careful for nothing; but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God.

**John 15:5** – I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.

**Philippians 4:13** - I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me.

**Romans 8:6-9** – <sup>6</sup> For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. <sup>7</sup> Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. <sup>8</sup> So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. <sup>9</sup> But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.

**1 Thessalonians 4:1-8** – <sup>1</sup> Furthermore then we beseech you, brethren, and exhort you by the Lord Jesus, that as ye have received of us how ye ought to walk and to please God, so ye would abound more and more. <sup>2</sup> For ye know what commandments we gave you by the Lord Jesus. <sup>3</sup> For this is the will of God, even your sanctification, that ye should abstain from fornication: <sup>4</sup> That every one of you should know how to possess his vessel in sanctification and honour; <sup>5</sup> Not in the lust of concupiscence, even as the Gentiles which know not God: <sup>6</sup> That no man go beyond and defraud his brother in any matter: because that the Lord is the avenger of all such, as we also have forewarned you and testified. <sup>7</sup> For God hath not called us unto uncleanness, but unto holiness. <sup>8</sup> He therefore that despiseth, despiseth not man, but God, who hath also given unto us his holy Spirit.

## **When Does God Determine Our Purpose**

**Jeremiah 1:4-5** – <sup>4</sup> Then the word of the LORD came unto me, saying, <sup>5</sup> Before I formed thee in the belly I knew thee; and before thou camest forth out of the womb I sanctified thee, and I ordained thee a prophet unto the nations.

**2 Timothy 1:9** – Who hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began,

## Different Gifts For Different People And Different Purposes

**Ephesians 4:11-13** – <sup>11</sup> And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; <sup>12</sup> For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: <sup>13</sup> Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ:

**1 Corinthians 12:28** – <sup>28</sup> And God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues.

**1 Corinthians 4:11** – <sup>4</sup> Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit. <sup>5</sup> And there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord. <sup>6</sup> And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God which worketh all in all. <sup>7</sup> But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal. <sup>8</sup> For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit; <sup>9</sup> To another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit; <sup>10</sup> To another the working of miracles; to another prophecy; to another discerning of spirits; to another divers kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues: <sup>11</sup> But all these worketh that one and the selfsame Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will.

**1 Corinthians 12:12-26** – <sup>12</sup> For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body: so also is Christ. <sup>13</sup> For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit. <sup>14</sup> For the body is not one member, but many. <sup>15</sup> If the foot shall say, Because I am not the hand, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body? <sup>16</sup> And if the ear shall say, Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body? <sup>17</sup> If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing? If the whole were hearing, where were the smelling? <sup>18</sup> But now hath God set the members every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased him. <sup>19</sup> And if they were all one member, where were the body? <sup>20</sup> But now are they many members, yet but one body. <sup>21</sup> And the eye cannot say unto the hand, I have no need of thee: nor again the head to the feet, I have no need of you. <sup>22</sup> Nay, much more those members of the body, which seem to be more feeble, are necessary: <sup>23</sup> And those members of the body, which we think to be less honourable, upon these we bestow more abundant honour; and our uncomely parts have more abundant comeliness. <sup>24</sup> For our comely parts have no need: but God hath tempered the body together, having given more abundant honour to that part which lacked: <sup>25</sup> That there should be no schism in the body; but that the members should have the same care one for another. <sup>26</sup> And whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it; or one member be honoured, all the members rejoice with it.

## Summary

God desires that we all receive His salvation which is his purpose for our lives. He further desires to achieve his individual purpose for each of our lives. We all have the unfortunate fate of being born into a sinful world. But we each have an unprecedented opportunity in all the universe never to be repeated again. We each have the opportunity to allow God to work through us to achieve His purpose for our lives in his plan of salvation.

God desires to use each of us for a specific purpose which He has ordained for our lives before we were even born. We do not need to figure out what God Has purposed for our lives, He will reveal it to us if we take the time to get to know Him and to know His voice.

God gives each of us different gifts in order to accomplish his purposes for our lives. None of these gifts are more important than others. There are gifts of: apostle, prophet, evangelist, pastor, teacher, miracles, healing, helps, administration, diversities of tongue, interpretation of tongues, discerning of spirits, and other gifts not specifically mentioned.

God can call us to use these gifts in our local congregation, or in a regional, national or international ministry. But in any case it is God who ordains our purpose, not ourselves and not someone else. While other people do not determine God's purpose for our lives, God can speak to us through other people.

No matter what God has purposed for our lives, it is important. In order for the body of Christ to operate properly, all the parts of God's body must work in unison in accordance as God has called them. While we may have more than one gift, each of the gifts are different. An evangelist is not the same as a pastor and a pastor is different than a teacher. God may give a person more than one gift but He has not called someone to an office if He has not given them the gift.

Seek God and His purpose for your life. Ask Him for the strength and faith you need to achieve His purpose. Don't be afraid to step out of your comfort zone and seek God for the strength to do so. Thank God for the opportunity to be part of His purpose for this world.

# #20

## Growing In Christ

The Apostle James, brother of Jesus, has given us the following counsel: “Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you....” (James 4:8) We can't draw close to God on our own accord, he has to come to us. But when we earnestly desire to be close to God and to be more like his son Jesus Christ he respects that and comes close to us. If we have a true earnest desire, it will show in our actions. We must be willing to do what it takes to grow closer to him and we must be willing to do what God asks. While we must be willing to take action, we are not capable of growing closer to God by our own actions. God must come to us. In this study we will learn through God's own words how to grow closer to him.

### God First Loved Us

**1 John 4:19** – We love him, because he first loved us.

**John 3:16** – For **God so loved** the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life

**Roman 5:8** – But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.

**Ephesians 1:5** – Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will,

### God Keeps His Promises

**Deuteronomy 4:31** – (For the LORD thy God *is* a merciful God;) he will not forsake thee, neither destroy thee, nor forget the covenant of thy fathers which he sware unto them.

**2 Peter 3:9** – The Lord is not **slack** concerning his promise, as some men count **slackness**; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.

**2 Peter 1:9** – We have also a sure word of Prophecy...

### We Shall Be Like Jesus

**1 John 3:2** – <sup>2</sup> Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, **we shall be like him**; for we shall see him as he is.

**1 John 3:10** – <sup>10</sup> In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.

## **We Begin Our Christian Life As Babes**

**Hebrews 5:12-14** – <sup>12</sup> For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again which be the first principles of the oracles of God; and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat. <sup>13</sup> For every one that useth milk is unskilful in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe. <sup>14</sup> But strong meat belongeth to them that are of full age, even those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil.

## **God Will Complete His Good Work In You**

**Philippians 1:6** – Being confident of this very thing, that he which hath begun a good work in you will perform it until the day of Jesus Christ:

## **God Can Do More Than We Can Imagine**

**Ephesians 3:20-21** – <sup>20</sup> Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us, <sup>21</sup> Unto him be glory in the church by Christ Jesus throughout all ages, world without end. Amen.

## **We Are Made Perfect And Receive The Spirit Through Faith**

**Galatians 3:2-7** – <sup>2</sup> This only would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith? <sup>3</sup> Are ye so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh? <sup>4</sup> Have ye suffered so many things in vain? if it be yet in vain. <sup>5</sup> He therefore that ministereth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doeth he it by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith? <sup>6</sup> Even as Abraham believed God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness. <sup>7</sup> Know ye therefore that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham.

## **Whoever Seeks Righteousness By Works Receives Death**

**Note:** The law is good. It is breaking the law that brings about the curse which is death. All of us are guilty of breaking the law and are therefore under a curse. Works are an important part of our conversion and spiritual growth. Our works give evidence of our conversion and salvation. James tells us: "For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also." (James 2:26) Our works are obedience to God and His commandments. The only way for righteousness to come through works is for a person to live a life of perfect obedience without sin their entire life. Only Jesus has lived this life. When Abraham obeyed God, it was accounted as righteousness but it was not his works that were accounted as righteousness but his faith. When Abraham obeyed God, it was because he believed God which is faith.

**Galatians 3:10-11** – <sup>10</sup> For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them. <sup>11</sup> But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: for, The just shall

live by faith.

**Romans 4:13-16** – <sup>13</sup> For the promise, that he should be the heir of the world, was not to Abraham, or to his seed, through the law, but through the righteousness of faith. <sup>14</sup> For if they which are of the law be heirs, faith is made void, and the promise made of none effect: <sup>15</sup> Because the law worketh wrath: for where no law is, there is no transgression. <sup>16</sup> Therefore it is of faith, that it might be by grace; to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed; not to that only which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham; who is the father of us all,

## The Just Live by Faith

**Galatians 5:6** – For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision; but faith which worketh by love.

**Galatians 2:20-21** – <sup>20</sup> I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh **I live by the faith of the Son of God**, who loved me, and gave himself for me. <sup>21</sup> I do not frustrate the grace of God: for if righteousness come by the law, then Christ is dead in vain.

**Habakkuk 2:4** – Behold, his soul which is lifted up is not upright in him: but **the just shall live by his faith**.

**Galatians 3:11** – But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: for, **The just shall live by faith**.

## Prayer and Fasting

The night before Jesus was crucified he was under great stress. He was under so much stress that he sweated blood. He knew that he would soon be betrayed, tried, beaten and crucified. He went to the Garden of Gethsemane and prayed. (Matthew 26:36)

Jesus fasted and prayed before He was tempted by the Satan in the wilderness. (Matthew 4:2) Some say that Jesus was tempted when He was at His weakest. This is false. Jesus was weak physically but His faith was at a peak. Jesus instructed His disciples that we need increased faith to face certain devils. He then told them that prayer fasting was the answer to their lack of faith.

**Matthew 17:14-21** – <sup>14</sup> And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a certain man, kneeling down to him, and saying, <sup>15</sup> Lord, have mercy on my son: for he is lunatick, and sore vexed: for oftentimes he falleth into the fire, and oft into the water. <sup>16</sup> And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not cure him. <sup>17</sup> Then Jesus answered and said, O **faithless** and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him hither to me. <sup>18</sup> And Jesus rebuked the devil; and he departed out of him: and the child was cured from that very hour. <sup>19</sup> Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out? <sup>20</sup> And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, If ye have **faith** as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you. <sup>21</sup> Howbeit this kind goeth not out but by **prayer and fasting**.

This text is often misunderstood. Jesus seems to contradict himself. First Jesus answers the

disciples question about why they could not cast out the devil. He tells them that they could not cast out the devils because of unbelief. Then He tells them that this type of devil must be cast out by prayer and fasting.

Unbelief or lack of faith was the disciples problem. Prayer and fasting was the solution to this problem. Prayer and fasting builds up our faith.

Further, Jesus said we could move a mountain with faith as small as the grain of mustard seed. Jesus was not speaking of a physical mountain, He was speaking of a seemingly insurmountable problem. Jesus revealed that we can conquer the biggest problems with faith. In this instance the problem was a man possessed by a stubborn devil. The solution to this problem was increased faith. The faith was obtainable through prayer and fasting.

## We Must Be Changed

**Galatians 6:15** - <sup>15</sup> For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature.

**Philippians 4:7-9** - <sup>8</sup> Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things *are* honest, whatsoever things *are* just, whatsoever things *are* pure, whatsoever things *are* lovely, whatsoever things *are* of good report; if *there be* any virtue, and if *there be* any praise, think on these things. <sup>9</sup> Those things, which ye have both learned, and received, and heard, and seen in me, do: and the God of peace shall be with you.

**1 Corinthians 15:30-31** - <sup>30</sup> And why stand we in jeopardy every hour? <sup>31</sup> I protest by your rejoicing which I have in Christ Jesus our Lord, I die daily.

## A Changed Person – Refrains From Evil

**James 2:20 & 26** - <sup>20</sup> But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?... <sup>26</sup> For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.

**Hebrews 12:12-15** - <sup>13</sup> And make straight paths for your feet, lest that which is lame be turned out of the way; but let it rather be healed. <sup>14</sup> Follow peace with all *men*, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord: <sup>15</sup> Looking diligently lest any man fail of the grace of God; lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble *you*, and thereby many be defiled;

**2 Corinthians 7:1-2** - <sup>1</sup> Having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God. <sup>2</sup> Receive us; we have wronged no man, we have corrupted no man, we have defrauded no man.

**1 Peter 3:8-12** - <sup>8</sup> Finally, be ye all of one mind, having compassion one of another, love as brethren, be pitiful, be courteous: <sup>9</sup> Not rendering evil for evil, or railing for railing: but contrariwise blessing; knowing that ye are thereunto called, that ye should inherit a blessing. <sup>10</sup> For he that will love life, and see good days, let him refrain his tongue from evil, and his lips that they speak no guile: <sup>11</sup> Let him eschew evil, and do good; let him seek peace, and ensue it. <sup>12</sup> For the eyes of the Lord are over the righteous, and his ears are open unto their prayers: but the face of the Lord is against them that do evil.

**Colossians 3:1-25** - <sup>1</sup> If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where

Christ sitteth on the right hand of God. <sup>2</sup> Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth. <sup>3</sup> For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God. <sup>4</sup> When Christ, who is our life, shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory. <sup>5</sup> Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry: <sup>6</sup> For which things' sake the wrath of God cometh on the children of disobedience: <sup>7</sup> In the which ye also walked some time, when ye lived in them.

<sup>8</sup> But now ye also put off all these; anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth. <sup>9</sup> Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds; <sup>10</sup> And have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him that created him: <sup>11</sup> Where there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond nor free: but Christ is all, and in all.

<sup>12</sup> Put on therefore, as the elect of God, holy and beloved, bowels of mercies, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, longsuffering; <sup>13</sup> Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any: even as Christ forgave you, so also do ye. <sup>14</sup> And above all these things put on charity, which is the bond of perfectness. <sup>15</sup> And let the peace of God rule in your hearts, to the which also ye are called in one body; and be ye thankful. <sup>16</sup> Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom; teaching and admonishing one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord. <sup>17</sup> And whatsoever ye do in word or deed, do all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God and the Father by him.

<sup>18</sup> Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as it is fit in the Lord. <sup>19</sup> Husbands, love your wives, and be not bitter against them. <sup>20</sup> Children, obey your parents in all things: for this is well pleasing unto the Lord. <sup>21</sup> Fathers, provoke not your children to anger, lest they be discouraged. <sup>22</sup> Servants, obey in all things your masters according to the flesh; not with eyeservice, as menpleasers; but in singleness of heart, fearing God: <sup>23</sup> And whatsoever ye do, do it heartily, as to the Lord, and not unto men; <sup>24</sup> Knowing that of the Lord ye shall receive the reward of the inheritance: for ye serve the Lord Christ. <sup>25</sup> But he that doeth wrong shall receive for the wrong which he hath done: and there is no respect of persons.

## Our Flesh Wars Against God's Spirit

**Romans 8:1-2** – <sup>1</sup> There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

**Galatians 5:17-21** – <sup>17</sup> For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would. <sup>18</sup> But if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law. <sup>19</sup> Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, <sup>20</sup> Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, <sup>21</sup> Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.

**Romans 7:14-25** – <sup>14</sup> For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin. <sup>15</sup> For that which I do I allow<sup>c</sup> not: for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I. <sup>16</sup> If then I do



that which I would not, I consent unto the law that it is good. <sup>17</sup> Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. <sup>18</sup> For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not. <sup>19</sup> For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do. <sup>20</sup> Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. <sup>21</sup> I find then a law, that, when I would do good, evil is present with me. <sup>22</sup> For I delight in the law of God after the inward man: <sup>23</sup> But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members. <sup>24</sup> O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death? <sup>25</sup> I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin.

Our flesh lusteth against the spirit and leads us into sin. But Jesus has died for our sins and freed us from the curse of the law. The important and defining question is what is our desire? Are you in agreement with God that the law is good? Is it your earnest desire to keep the law? Or do you want forgiveness but love sin and want to continue sinning? If you dislike God's law and have no desire to give up cherished sins, then you have not repented. Jesus taught that we must repent or perish (Luke 13:5, 5).

In Romans 7 the Apostle Paul explained that it is the desire of our heart that is important. He said that when he sinned, it was something he didn't want to do but what his flesh wanted to do. And when he failed to do good, he failed to do that which he desired to do. He didn't want to sin but sinned. He wanted to do good and often failed. Since Paul desired to do what was right, he said it was not him that sinned but sin that lived within his flesh. The key was that he delighted in the law of God.

Our flesh itself isn't actually sinful. Our flesh is a symbol of our carnal nature. Our flesh is inherited and is based on our genetics and we have no control over it. We can't change our genetic code. If we have a genetic flaw, we can't change it. Likewise, if we were blessed with good genes, we cannot take credit for it. Our carnal nature is the same way. We can't change our nature, we need to depend on God for help. What we can do is make a decision that we want to change and seek God's help.

But don't confuse your flesh with your actions. A man cannot change that beautiful women excite him. But a man can make a decision to avoid situations where beautiful women could lead him into sin. An alcoholic can't change the fact that they are an alcoholic. But when an alcoholic makes a decision to stay sober, they must change their behavior in order to be successful. Typically they would need to stop carrying alcohol around with them. They would need to rid their home of alcohol. They would need to stay away from bars. They may need to change friends. Likewise, when we seek to overcome any sin, we need to make conscious changes in our life.

Paul said: "the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good." (Romans 7:12) Paul's desires and beliefs made a difference. He was no longer under the law but under grace because he had repented and confessed his sins. He had claimed Jesus Christ as his savior and desired to do all Jesus commanded. Because of this, it was not him that sinned but his flesh. He writes: "I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin." (Romans 7:25)

It is important to recognize that Paul was a keeper of the Ten Commandments. His failures were in the finer points of the law. This includes perfect love and perfect obedience to all of God's leading in our life each day. Only Jesus could perfectly obey God. He stated: "When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am he, and that **I do nothing of myself; but as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things**. And he that sent me is with me: the Father hath not left me alone; for I do always those things that please him." (John 8:28-29) Jesus also said: "Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise. For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him all things

that himself doeth: and he will shew him greater works than these, that ye may marvel.” (John 5:19-20)

Let us desire and strive to be like our Saviour, Jesus Christ. When we truly desire to be more like Jesus, God will send His Holy Spirit to help us. As we grow in Christ, we will see where the Father is working, we will see what he is doing, we will desire to join him in what he is doing and the Holy Spirit will guide us and show us what God would have us do. Most importantly, the Holy Spirit will help us do it. We will need the Holy Spirit's help because God will ask us to do things we can not do in our own power or strength.

## **Jesus Has Broken The Curse of the Law**

**Galatians 3:13-18** – <sup>13</sup> Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree: <sup>14</sup> That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ; that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith. <sup>15</sup> Brethren, I speak after the manner of men; Though it be but a man's covenant, yet if it be confirmed, no man disannulleth, or addeth thereto. <sup>16</sup> Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ. <sup>17</sup> And this I say, that the covenant, that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the law, which was four hundred and thirty years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect. <sup>18</sup> For if the inheritance be of the law, it is no more of promise: but God gave it to Abraham by promise.

## **Walking In The Spirit Brings Victory**

**Galatians 5:16, 18, 22-26** – <sup>16</sup> This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh.... <sup>18</sup> But if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law.... <sup>22</sup> But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, <sup>23</sup> Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law. <sup>24</sup> And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts. <sup>25</sup> If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit. <sup>26</sup> Let us not be desirous of vain glory, provoking one another, envying one another.

## **Worship**

**John 4:23-24** – <sup>23</sup> But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. <sup>24</sup> God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.

## **Confession**

**1 John 1:9** – <sup>9</sup> If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

## The Word

**John 17:17** – [Jesus prayed:] Sanctify them through thy truth: **thy word is truth.**

**Romans 10:17** – **So then faith cometh by hearing,** and hearing by **the word of God.**

**Proverbs 30:5-6** – <sup>5</sup> **Every word of God is pure:** he is a shield unto them that put their trust in him. <sup>6</sup> Add thou not unto his words, lest he reprove thee, and thou be found a liar.

**Luke 3:3** – Give us day by day our daily bread. [Jesus is the word made flesh (John 1:1 & 14). Bread represents the body of Jesus (Matt 26:26). Therefore, each day we need our bread which represents the word of God.]

**Luke 4:4** – And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written, That man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God.

**Acts 19:18-20** – <sup>18</sup> And many that believed came, and confessed, and shewed their deeds. <sup>19</sup> Many of them also which used curious arts brought their books together, and burned them before all men: and they counted the price of them, and found it fifty thousand pieces of silver. <sup>20</sup> So mightily grew the word of God and prevailed.

**Hebrews 4:12** – <sup>12</sup> For **the word of God is quick, and powerful,** and sharper than any twoedged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discernor of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

**Revelation 19:13** – And he [Jesus] was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and **his name is called The Word of God.**

**2 Timothy 3:16-17** – <sup>16</sup> All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: <sup>17</sup> That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.

## If You Read The Word You Shall Understand The Mystery of Christ

**Ephesians 3:2-7** – <sup>2</sup> If ye have heard of the dispensation of the grace of God which is given me to you-ward: <sup>3</sup> How that **by revelation he made known unto me the mystery; (as I wrote afore in few words,** <sup>4</sup> Whereby, **when ye read, ye may understand my knowledge in the mystery of Christ)** <sup>5</sup> Which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men, as it is now revealed unto his holy apostles and prophets by the Spirit; <sup>6</sup> That the Gentiles should be fellowheirs, and of the same body, and partakers of his promise in Christ by the gospel: <sup>7</sup> Whereof I was made a minister, according to the gift of the grace of God given unto me by the effectual working of his power.

## The Armour of God

**2 Corinthians 10:3-6** – <sup>3</sup> For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh: <sup>4</sup> (For the weapons of our warfare *are* not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds;) <sup>5</sup> Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and

bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ; <sup>6</sup> And having in a readiness to revenge all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled.

**Ephesians 6:10-18** – <sup>10</sup> Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might. <sup>11</sup> Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. <sup>12</sup> For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places. <sup>13</sup> Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand. <sup>14</sup> Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth [the truth from God's word], and having on the breastplate of righteousness [the righteousness of Christ]; <sup>15</sup> And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace [the testimony of Christ]; <sup>16</sup> Above all, taking the shield of faith [our faith is God's promises], wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked. <sup>17</sup> And take the helmet of salvation [the salvation we have in Christ Jesus], and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God: <sup>18</sup> Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints; (Words in brackets added for clarification.)

## Gifts of The Spirit

**Ephesians 4:4-14** – <sup>4</sup> There is one body, and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling; <sup>5</sup> One Lord, one faith, one baptism, <sup>6</sup> One God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all. <sup>7</sup> But unto every one of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ. <sup>8</sup> Wherefore he saith, When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men. <sup>9</sup> (Now that he ascended, what is it but that he also descended first into the lower parts of the earth? <sup>10</sup> He that descended is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that he might fill all things.) <sup>11</sup> And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; <sup>12</sup> For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: <sup>13</sup> Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ: <sup>14</sup> That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive;

God has bestowed spiritual gifts on every believer. To grow in Christ, it is necessary to discover what gifts God has given us. Further, we are to seek God and have him reveal his purpose for our gifts and our lives. Finally, we are to follow the leading of the Holy Spirit as God reveals his purpose for our lives each day.

Christians have all of eternity to enjoy the blessings of God. But we have a very short time where we can work with Him in order to help Him achieve His purposes in a sinful world. When our life is ended on this earth, we will never again have the blessed opportunity to reach a lost soul and lead them to a saving relationship with Jesus Christ. It is a privilege and a blessing to serve God with the gifts he has given us.

## God Is In Control

**Habakkuk 1:5-6** – <sup>5</sup> Behold ye among the heathen, and regard, and wonder marvellously: for I

**will work a work in your days**, which ye will not believe, though it be told you. <sup>6</sup> For, lo, **I raise up** the Chaldeans, that bitter and hasty nation, which shall march through the breadth of the land, to possess the dwellingplaces that are not theirs.

**Habakkuk 2:2-3** – <sup>2</sup> And the LORD answered me, and said, Write the vision, and make it plain upon tables, that he may run that readeth it. <sup>3</sup> For **the vision is yet for an appointed time**, but at the end it shall speak, and not lie: **though it tarry, wait for it; because it will surely come, it will not tarry.**

**Habakkuk 3:1-6** – <sup>1</sup> A prayer of Habakkuk the prophet upon Shigionoth. <sup>2</sup> O LORD, I have heard thy speech, and was afraid: O LORD, revive thy work in the midst of the years, in the midst of the years make known; in wrath remember mercy. <sup>3</sup> God came from Teman, and the Holy One from mount Paran. Selah. His glory covered the heavens, and the earth was full of his praise. <sup>4</sup> And his brightness was as the light; he had horns coming out of his hand: and there was the hiding of his power. <sup>5</sup> Before him went the pestilence, and burning coals went forth at his feet. <sup>6</sup> He stood, and measured the earth: he beheld, and drove asunder the nations; and the everlasting mountains were scattered, the perpetual hills did bow: his ways are everlasting.

**Isaiah 45:5-7** – <sup>5</sup> I am the LORD, and there is none else, there is no God beside me: I girded thee, though thou hast not known me: <sup>6</sup> That they may know from the rising of the sun, and from the west, that there is none beside me. I am the LORD, and there is none else. <sup>7</sup> **I form the light, and create darkness: I make peace, and create evil: I the LORD do all these things.**

**Isaiah 45:11-13** – <sup>11</sup> Thus saith the LORD, the Holy One of Israel, and his Maker, Ask me of things to come concerning my sons, and concerning the work of my hands command ye me. <sup>12</sup> I have made the earth, and created man upon it: I, even my hands, have stretched out the heavens, and all their host have I commanded. <sup>13</sup> I have raised him up in righteousness, and I will direct all his ways: he shall build my city, and he shall let go my captives, not for price nor reward, saith the LORD of hosts.

**Isaiah 55:8-11** – <sup>8</sup> For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways, saith the LORD. <sup>9</sup> For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts than your thoughts. <sup>10</sup> For as the rain cometh down, and the snow from heaven, and returneth not thither, but watereth the earth, and maketh it bring forth and bud, that it may give seed to the sower, and bread to the eater: <sup>11</sup> **So shall my word be that goeth forth out of my mouth: it shall not return unto me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper in the thing whereto I sent it.**

**Job 41:11** – [God says:] Who hath prevented me, that I should repay him? **whatsoever is under the whole heaven is mine.**

**Genesis 45:5-8** – <sup>5</sup> Now therefore be not grieved, nor angry with yourselves, that ye sold me hither: for **God did send me before you to preserve life.** <sup>6</sup> For these two years hath the famine been in the land: and yet there are five years, in the which there shall neither be earing nor harvest. <sup>7</sup> And **God sent me before you to preserve you a posterity in the earth**, and to save your lives by a great deliverance. <sup>8</sup> So now it was not you that sent me hither, but **God: and he hath made me a father to Pharaoh, and lord of all his house, and a ruler throughout all the land of Egypt.**

**Genesis 50:20** – But as for you, ye thought evil against me; but **God meant it unto good**, to bring to pass, as it is this day, to save much people alive.

**John 9:2-3** – <sup>2</sup> And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blind? <sup>3</sup> Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but **that the works of God should be made manifest in him.**

**1 John 4:4-21** – <sup>4</sup> Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world. <sup>5</sup> They are of the world: therefore speak they of the world, and the world heareth them. <sup>6</sup> We are of God: he that knoweth God heareth us; he that is not of God heareth not us. Hereby know we the spirit of truth, and the spirit of error.

<sup>7</sup> Beloved, let us love one another: for love is of God; and every one that loveth is born of God, and knoweth God. <sup>8</sup> He that loveth not knoweth not God; for God is love. <sup>9</sup> In this was manifested the love of God toward us, because that God sent his only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through him. <sup>10</sup> Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son to be the propitiation for our sins. <sup>11</sup> Beloved, if God so loved us, we ought also to love one another. <sup>12</sup> No man hath seen God at any time. If we love one another, God dwelleth in us, and his love is perfected in us. <sup>13</sup> Hereby know we that we dwell in him, and he in us, because he hath given us of his Spirit.

<sup>14</sup> And we have seen and do testify that the Father sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world. <sup>15</sup> Whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God. <sup>16</sup> And we have known and believed the love that God hath to us. God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him.

<sup>17</sup> Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment: because as he is, so are we in this world. <sup>18</sup> There is no fear in love; but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment. He that feareth is not made perfect in love. <sup>19</sup> We love him, because he first loved us. <sup>20</sup> If a man say, I love God, and hateth his brother, he is a liar: for he that loveth not his brother whom he hath seen, how can he love God whom he hath not seen? <sup>21</sup> And this commandment have we from him, That he who loveth God love his brother also.

## Putting Others First

**1 John 3:16** – <sup>16</sup> Hereby perceive we the love of God, because he laid down his life for us: and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren.

## Growing In The Spirit

**John 3:5** – <sup>5</sup> Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

**John 16:13-14** – <sup>13</sup> Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come. <sup>14</sup> He shall glorify me: for he shall receive of mine, and shall shew it unto you.

**John 16:7-8** – <sup>7</sup> Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter [Holy Spirit] will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you. <sup>8</sup> And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment:

**Matthew 5:6** – <sup>6</sup> Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled.

**Galatians 5:16-18** – <sup>16</sup> This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh. <sup>17</sup> For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would. <sup>18</sup> But if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law.

## The Prayer's of David

**Psalm 86:11-17** – <sup>11</sup> Teach me thy way, O LORD; I will walk in thy truth: unite my heart to fear thy name. <sup>12</sup> I will praise thee, O Lord my God, with all my heart: and I will glorify thy name for evermore. <sup>13</sup> For great is thy mercy toward me: and thou hast delivered my soul from the lowest hell. <sup>14</sup> O God, the proud are risen against me, and the assemblies of violent men have sought after my soul; and have not set thee before them. <sup>15</sup> But thou, O Lord, art a God full of compassion, and gracious, longsuffering, and plenteous in mercy and truth. <sup>16</sup> O turn unto me, and have mercy upon me; give thy strength unto thy servant, and save the son of thine handmaid. <sup>17</sup> Shew me a token for good; that they which hate me may see it, and be ashamed: because thou, LORD, hast holpen me, and comforted me.

**Psalm 139:23-24** – <sup>23</sup> Search me, O God, and know my heart: try me, and know my thoughts: <sup>24</sup> And see if there be any wicked way in me, and lead me in the way everlasting.

## Summary

I wish there was a formula for growing close to God but there isn't. It is a relationship. We are all different. We all have different needs, different problems, different hang-ups and different personalities. Therefore, each of us will develop our relationship with God in slightly different ways.

God knows each of us better than we know ourselves. He knows what we need and he knows what will be a stumbling stone for us. If we willingly submit ourselves to him fully, our relationship will grow quickly. If we have areas of our life that we are unwilling to submit to him, our relationship will progress more slowly. If we learn to hear His voice, He will guide us. If we have trouble hearing His voice, we need to seek Him and ask Him what the cause is and remove it from our life. We may need to Fast and spend more time in prayer.

In my senior year in college I had a business management class. Our last assignment was to predict interest rates for each quarter of the coming year. Throughout my college experience I had learned many methods of forecasting the economy, interest rates and the stock market. But I had also learned that none of these methods were reliable. Therefore, I chose not to use any of the methods I had learned. I used a combination of the methods and my personal judgment based on the political climate. I could not explain my forecast in any reproducible formula and therefore I was rebuked and my grade for the class suffered as a result. Those who used formulas proven to be unreliable received an "A". People like formulas even if they don't work! Nevertheless, time proved my forecast to be 100% accurate.

Don't fall into the trap of believing that your spiritual growth has to progress according to any formula because it doesn't. There are certain elements that are essential to our spiritual growth. These are faith, love, confession and repentance, Bible study, prayer, praise and worship, fasting, refraining

from evil and being obedient to God's voice in our life (walking in the spirit). But God may call one person to spend more time in prayer and another to spend more time in Bible study. It is almost certain that as the seasons of our life change, God will call each of us to spend more time in one or more of these elements of our spiritual growth. If we are in tune with God, we will hear Him and obey. As we walk in obedience to God from one season of our life to another, our faith will grow, our relationship will grow deeper and deeper and we will get to know him better and better.



# #21

## Satan

Any great military commander will know his enemy. He will know his enemies strengths and his enemies weaknesses. He will know the tactics of his enemy. He will know how his enemy thinks and how his enemy will react to any given circumstance. And by knowing these things, he will defeat his enemy. Likewise, every Christian is to know their enemy. Paul writes: "Lest Satan should get an advantage of us: for we are not ignorant of his devices." (2 Corinthians 2:11)

Our enemy is not flesh and blood. The Apostle Paul writes: "Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might. Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places." (Ephesians 6:10-12)

## Who Is Satan?

### An Anointed Cherub of God

**Ezekiel 28:13-19** – <sup>13</sup> Thou hast been in Eden the garden of God; every precious stone was thy covering, the sardius, topaz, and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx, and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald, and the carbuncle, and gold: the workmanship of thy tabrets and of thy pipes was prepared in thee in the day that thou wast created. <sup>14</sup> **Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth**; and I have set thee so: thou wast upon the holy mountain of God; thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire. <sup>15</sup> Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created, till iniquity was found in thee. <sup>16</sup> By the multitude of thy merchandise they have filled the midst of thee with violence, and thou hast sinned: therefore I will cast thee as profane out of the mountain of God: and I will destroy thee, O covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire. <sup>17</sup> Thine heart was lifted up because of thy beauty, thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness: I will cast thee to the ground, I will lay thee before kings, that they may behold thee. <sup>18</sup> Thou hast defiled thy sanctuaries by the multitude of thine iniquities, by the iniquity of thy traffick; therefore will I bring forth a fire from the midst of thee, it shall devour thee, and I will bring thee to ashes upon the earth in the sight of all them that behold thee. <sup>19</sup> All they that know thee among the people shall be astonished at thee: thou shalt be a terror, and never shalt thou be any more.

### A Fallen Angel Who Seeks God's Throne

**Isaiah 14:12-15** – <sup>12</sup> How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! <sup>13</sup> For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of

the congregation, in the sides of the north: <sup>14</sup> I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. <sup>15</sup> Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit.

## The Dragon Who Wars Against God

**Revelation 12:6-9** – <sup>7</sup> And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels, <sup>8</sup> And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. <sup>9</sup> **And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan,** which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

## The Son of Perdition

Perdition comes from the Greek word “apoleia” which means utter destruction. God will defeat the devil and completely destroy him. For the remainder of eternity, he will exist no more.

**2 Thessalonians 2:3-4** – <sup>3</sup> Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the **son of perdition**; <sup>4</sup> Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God.

## Who Are Satan's Accomplices

### Satan's Fallen Angels

In the King James Version, Satan's accomplices are referred to as devils. The Greek word is “daimonion”, the modern translations translate this as demon. The Greek word for being possessed is “daimonizomai”. It doesn't matter whether you call them devils or demons; in either case they are fallen angles who serve Satan as the following verses reveal:

**Revelation 12:3-4** – <sup>3</sup> And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads. <sup>4</sup> And **his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth:**

**Revelation 12:9** – **And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan,** which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and **his angels were cast out with him.**

**Revelation 16:13-14** – <sup>13</sup> And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet. <sup>14</sup> For they are the spirits of devils, working miracles, which go forth unto the kings of the earth and of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty.

**Mathew 4:24** – And his fame went throughout all Syria: and they brought unto him all sick people that were taken with divers diseases and torments, and those which were possessed with devils, and

those which were lunatick, and those that had the palsy; and he healed them.

**Mathew 8:16** – When the even was come, they brought unto him many that were possessed with devils: and he cast out the spirits with his word, and healed all that were sick:

**Mark 1:34** – And he healed many that were sick of divers diseases, and cast out many devils; and suffered not the devils to speak, because they knew him.

**Luke 8:2** – And certain women, which had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities, Mary called Magdalene, out of whom went seven devils,

**Luke 8:30** – And Jesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? And he said, Legion: because many devils were entered into him.

## Satan's Human Servants

**Matthew 12:30** – He that is not with me is against me; and he that gathereth not with me scattereth abroad.

**Romans 6:16** – Know ye not, that **to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye** are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?

**Philippians 3:17-21** – <sup>17</sup> Brethren, be followers together of me, and mark them which walk so as ye have us for an ensample. <sup>18</sup> (For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that **they are the enemies of the cross of Christ:** <sup>19</sup> Whose end is destruction [perdition], whose God is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things.) <sup>20</sup> For our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ: <sup>21</sup> Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things unto himself.

**Romans 16:17-18** – <sup>17</sup> Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them. <sup>18</sup> **For they that are such serve not our Lord Jesus Christ,** but their own belly; and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple.

**Jude 11-25** – <sup>11</sup> Woe unto them! for they have gone in the way of Cain, and ran greedily after the error of Balaam for reward, and perished in the gainsaying of Core. <sup>12</sup> These are spots in your feasts of charity, when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: clouds they are without water, carried about of winds; trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots; <sup>13</sup> Raging waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame; wandering stars, to whom is reserved **the blackness of darkness for ever [perdition].** <sup>14</sup> And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints,

<sup>15</sup> To execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against him. <sup>16</sup> These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their own lusts; and their mouth speaketh great swelling words, having men's persons in admiration because of

advantage. <sup>17</sup> But, beloved, remember ye the words which were spoken before of the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ; <sup>18</sup> How that they told you there should be mockers in the last time, who should walk after their own ungodly lusts. <sup>19</sup> **These be they who separate themselves, sensual, having not the Spirit.** <sup>20</sup> But ye, beloved, building up yourselves on your most holy faith, praying in the Holy Ghost, <sup>21</sup> Keep yourselves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal life. <sup>22</sup> And of some have compassion, making a difference: <sup>23</sup> And others save with fear, pulling them out of the fire; hating even the garment spotted by the flesh. <sup>24</sup> Now unto him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present you faultless before the presence of his glory with exceeding joy, <sup>25</sup> To the only wise God our Saviour, be glory and majesty, dominion and power, both now and ever. Amen.

**John 17:12** – While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the **son of perdition**; that the scripture might be fulfilled.

## The Character of Satan

### Sinner

**1 John 3:8** – He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.

### Liar

**John 8:44** – Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.

### Deceiver

**Revelation 12:9** – And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and **Satan, which deceiveth the whole world**: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

### Our Adversary

**1 Peter 5:8** – Be sober, be vigilant; because **your adversary the devil**, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour:

**Matthew 13:39** – **The enemy that sowed them is the devil**; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels.

## **Our Accuser**

**Revelation 12:9-10** – <sup>9</sup> And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. <sup>10</sup> And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for **the accuser of our brethren** is cast down, which **accused them before our God day and night**.

## **Satan's Objectives**

### **Undo God's Work**

**Mark 4:15** – And these are they by the way side, where the word is sown; but when they have heard, Satan cometh immediately, and taketh away the word that was sown in their hearts.

### **Turn Men Away From God**

**Job 2:3-5** – <sup>4</sup> And Satan answered the LORD, and said, Skin for skin, yea, all that a man hath will he give for his life. <sup>5</sup> But put forth thine hand now, and touch his bone and his flesh, and he will curse thee to thy face.

### **Cause Men To Do Evil**

**John 13:2 & 27** – <sup>2</sup> And supper being ended, the devil having now put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, to betray him;... <sup>27</sup> And after the sop Satan entered into him. Then said Jesus unto him, That thou doest, do quickly.

### **To Be Worshiped**

**Luke 4:6-8** – <sup>6</sup> And the devil said unto him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will I give it. <sup>7</sup> If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine. <sup>8</sup> And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee behind me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.

**2 Thessalonians 2:3-4** – <sup>3</sup> Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition; <sup>4</sup> Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God.

**Deuteronomy 32:17** – They sacrificed unto devils, not to God; to gods whom they knew not, to new gods that came newly up, whom your fathers feared not.

**Psalm 106:37** – Yea, they sacrificed their sons and their daughters unto devils,

## To Steal, Kill and Destroy

**John 10:10** – <sup>10</sup> The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly.

**Hebrews 2:14** – Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same; that through death he might destroy **him that had the power of death, that is, the devil;**

## Satan's Tactics

### He Uses Disguises

**2 Corinthians 11:14-15** – <sup>14</sup> And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. <sup>15</sup> Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works.

**Genesis 3:1** – Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden?

### He Deceives

**Genesis 3:1-5** – <sup>1</sup> Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said unto the woman, **Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden?** <sup>2</sup> And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: <sup>3</sup> But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die. <sup>4</sup> And the serpent said unto the woman, **Ye shall not surely die:** <sup>5</sup> **For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil.**

**Revelation 20:10** – And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.

**1 Timothy 4:1-2** – <sup>1</sup> Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils; <sup>2</sup> Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron;

## He Distorts Scripture

**Mark 4:15** – And these are they by the way side, where the word is sown; but when they have heard, Satan cometh immediately, and taketh away the word that was sown in their hearts.

**1 Timothy 4:1** – Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils.

## He Tempts Us

**1 Chronicles 21:1** – And Satan stood up against Israel, and provoked David to number Israel.

**Matthew 4:3** – And when the tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread.

**Mark 1:13** – And he was there in the wilderness forty days, tempted of Satan; and was with the wild beasts; and the angels ministered unto him.

**Acts 5:3** – But Peter said, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart to lie to the Holy Ghost, and to keep back part of the price of the land?

**Luke 4:3-8** – <sup>3</sup> And the devil said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, command this stone that it be made bread. <sup>4</sup> And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written, That man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God. <sup>5</sup> And the devil, taking him up into an high mountain, shewed unto him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time. <sup>6</sup> And the devil said unto him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will I give it. <sup>7</sup> If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine. <sup>8</sup> And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee behind me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.

## He Afflicts And Oppresses Us

**Job 2:7** – So went Satan forth from the presence of the LORD, and smote Job with sore boils from the sole of his foot unto his crown.

**Acts 10:38** – How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil; for God was with him.

**2 Corinthians 12:7** – And lest I should be exalted above measure through the abundance of the revelations, there was given to me a thorn in the flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet me, lest I should be exalted above measure.

**Revelation 2:10** – Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer: behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried; and ye shall have tribulation ten days: be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life.

## He Tries To Destroy Our Good Works

**Zechariah 3:1** – And he shewed me Joshua the high priest standing before the angel of the LORD, and Satan standing at his right hand to resist him.

**1 Thessalonians 2:18** – Wherefore we would have come unto you, even I Paul, once and again; but Satan hindered us.

## He Possesses

**Luke 22:3** – Then entered Satan into Judas surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve.

**John 13:27** – And after the sop Satan entered into him. Then said Jesus unto him, That thou doest, do quickly.

**Matthew 7:22** – Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works?

**Matthew 8:16** – When the even was come, they brought unto him many that were possessed with devils: and he cast out the spirits with his word, and healed all that were sick:

**Matthew 8:28** – And when he was come to the other side into the country of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way.

**Matthew 9:32** – As they went out, behold, they brought to him a dumb man possessed with a devil.

**Matthew 10:7-8** – <sup>7</sup> And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand. <sup>8</sup> Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye have received, freely give.

## He Does Miracles

**Revelation 16:14** – For they are the spirits of devils, working miracles, which go forth unto the kings of the earth and of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty.

**Revelation 19:20** – And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image.

**Revelation 13:11-14** – <sup>11</sup> And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth; and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon. <sup>12</sup> And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed. <sup>13</sup> And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men, <sup>14</sup> And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast; saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live.



# Satan's Defeat

## Our Victory Over Satan

**Ephesians 6:10-11** – <sup>10</sup> Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might. <sup>11</sup> Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil.

**Romans 16:20** – And the God of peace shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen.

**James 4:7** – Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you.

**Romans 8:28** – And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are called according to his purpose.

**Luke 10:17-19** – <sup>17</sup> And the seventy returned again with joy, saying, Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through thy name. <sup>18</sup> And he said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven. <sup>19</sup> Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you.

**Mathew 18:18-20** – <sup>18</sup> Verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. <sup>19</sup> Again I say unto you, That if two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven. <sup>20</sup> For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

**Mark 16:17** – And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues;

## Satan's Judgment

**John 16:11** – Of judgment, because the prince of this world is judged.

**John 12:31** – Now is the judgment of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out.

**Matthew 25:41** – Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels:

**Revelation 20:1-3** – <sup>1</sup> And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. <sup>2</sup> And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years, <sup>3</sup> And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season.

**Revelation 20:10** – And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.

## Summary

Satan is a very capable adversary but we must remember above all, he is defeated. Satan and his demons are real. He is our adversary; he is a liar; he is a deceiver and our accuser. Satan seeks to steal, kill and destroy. He seeks to undue God's work and turn each of us away from God. He seeks to destroy our good works as well.

Satan has many devices to achieve his purpose. He deceives; he distorts scripture; he tempts us; he afflicts us; and oppresses us. His demons can possess people and they can do miracles. His power is awesome and not to be made light of. But his power does not compare to the power of our God in heaven who tells us that Satan is defeated.

Satan and his demons will be judged and they will be thrown in the lake of fire where they will be consumed along with all their evil works. And all sin and sadness will be done away with.

## #22

# Why God Judges

There are several types of judgment. There is what is called chastisement which God uses for training his followers. This helps to keep them on the right path. There are warning judgments that bring hardship to individuals and nations. There is the final judgment of nations. And there is the final judgment of the wicked. In this study we will primarily focus on why God brings hardship to individuals and nations.

## God Is Merciful And Slow To Anger

**Psalm 103:8-13** – The LORD is merciful and gracious, slow to anger, and plenteous in mercy. He will not always chide: neither will he keep his anger for ever. He hath not dealt with us after our sins; nor rewarded us according to our iniquities. For as the heaven is high above the earth, so great is his mercy toward them that fear him. As far as the east is from the west, so far hath he removed our transgressions from us. Like as a father pitieth (has compassion for) his children, so the LORD pitieth (has compassion for) them that fear him.

## God Desires Our Salvation

**1 Thessalonians 5:9-10** – For God hath not appointed us to wrath, but to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ, Who died for us, that, whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with him.

**Ephesians 1:4-7** – <sup>4</sup> According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: <sup>5</sup> Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, <sup>6</sup> To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved. <sup>7</sup> In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace;

## The Reason For Judgment

**Colossians 3:5-6** – <sup>5</sup> Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry: <sup>6</sup> For which things' sake the wrath of God cometh on the children of disobedience:

**Romans 2:5-9** – <sup>5</sup> But after thy hardness and impenitent heart treasurest up unto thyself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God; <sup>6</sup> Who will render to every man according to his deeds: <sup>7</sup> To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honour and immortality, eternal life: <sup>8</sup> But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation and wrath, <sup>9</sup> Tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that doeth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile;

**Ecclesiastics 12:13** – <sup>13</sup> Let us hear the conclusion of the whole matter: Fear God, and keep his commandments: for this is the whole duty of man. <sup>14</sup> For God shall bring every work into judgment, with every secret thing, whether it be good, or whether it be evil.

**Romans 13:3-4** – <sup>4</sup> For he is the minister of God to thee for good. But if thou do that which is evil, be afraid; for he beareth not the sword in vain: for he is the minister of God, a revenger to execute wrath upon him that doeth evil.

**Romans 1:18-32** – <sup>18</sup> For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness; <sup>19</sup> Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them: for God hath shewed it unto them. <sup>20</sup> For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse: <sup>21</sup> Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. <sup>22</sup> Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, <sup>23</sup> And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things. <sup>24</sup> Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves: <sup>25</sup> Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen. <sup>26</sup> For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature: <sup>27</sup> And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompence of their error which was meet. <sup>28</sup> And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient; <sup>29</sup> Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, <sup>30</sup> Backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, <sup>31</sup> Without understanding, covenantbreakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful: <sup>32</sup> Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them.

**1 Corinthians 6:9-10** – <sup>9</sup> Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, <sup>10</sup> Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.

**Galatians 5:19-21** – <sup>19</sup> Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, <sup>20</sup> Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, <sup>21</sup> Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.

## The Blessings of Obedience

**Deuteronomy 7:12-18** – <sup>12</sup> Wherefore it shall come to pass, if ye hearken to these judgments, and keep, and do them, that the LORD thy God shall keep unto thee the covenant and the mercy which he swore unto thy fathers: <sup>13</sup> And he will love thee, and bless thee, and multiply thee: he will also bless

the fruit of thy womb, and the fruit of thy land, thy corn, and thy wine, and thine oil, the increase of thy kine, and the flocks of thy sheep, in the land which he swore unto thy fathers to give thee. <sup>14</sup> Thou shalt be blessed above all people: there shall not be male or female barren among you, or among your cattle. <sup>15</sup> And the LORD will take away from thee all sickness, and will put none of the evil diseases of Egypt, which thou knowest, upon thee; but will lay them upon all them that hate thee. <sup>16</sup> And thou shalt consume all the people which the LORD thy God shall deliver thee; thine eye shall have no pity upon them: neither shalt thou serve their gods; for that will be a snare unto thee. <sup>17</sup> If thou shalt say in thine heart, These nations are more than I; how can I dispossess them? <sup>18</sup> Thou shalt not be afraid of them: but shalt well remember what the LORD thy God did unto Pharaoh, and unto all Egypt;

## God Gives A Choice

**Deuteronomy 30:15-18** – <sup>15</sup> - See, I have set before thee this day life and good, and death and evil; <sup>16</sup> In that I command thee this day to love the LORD thy God, to walk in his ways, and to keep his commandments and his statutes and his judgments, that thou mayest live and multiply: and the LORD thy God shall bless thee in the land whither thou goest to possess it. <sup>17</sup> But if thine heart turn away, so that thou wilt not hear, but shalt be drawn away, and worship other gods, and serve them; <sup>18</sup> I denounce unto you this day, that ye shall surely perish, and that ye shall not prolong your days upon the land, whither thou passest over Jordan to go to possess it.

**Deuteronomy 30:19-20** – <sup>19</sup> I call heaven and earth to record this day against you, that I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing: therefore choose life, that both thou and thy seed may live: <sup>20</sup> That thou mayest love the LORD thy God, and that thou mayest obey his voice, and that thou mayest cleave unto him: for he is thy life, and the length of thy days: that thou mayest dwell in the land which the LORD swore unto thy fathers, to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob, to give them.

**Deuteronomy 11:26-32** – <sup>26</sup> Behold, I set before you this day a blessing and a curse; <sup>27</sup> A blessing, if ye obey the commandments of the LORD your God, which I command you this day: <sup>28</sup> And a curse, if ye will not obey the commandments of the LORD your God, but turn aside out of the way which I command you this day, to go after other gods, which ye have not known. <sup>29</sup> And it shall come to pass, when the LORD thy God hath brought thee in unto the land whither thou goest to possess it, that thou shalt put the blessing upon mount Gerizim, and the curse upon mount Ebal. <sup>30</sup> Are they not on the other side Jordan, by the way where the sun goeth down, in the land of the Canaanites, which dwell in the champaign over against Gilgal, beside the plains of Moreh? <sup>31</sup> For ye shall pass over Jordan to go in to possess the land which the LORD your God giveth you, and ye shall possess it, and dwell therein. <sup>32</sup> And ye shall observe to do all the statutes and judgments which I set before you this day.

## God Delights In Judgment

**Psalms 19:7-11** – <sup>7</sup> The law of the LORD is perfect, converting the soul: the testimony of the LORD is sure, making wise the simple. <sup>8</sup> The statutes of the LORD are right, rejoicing the heart: the commandment of the LORD is pure, enlightening the eyes. <sup>9</sup> The fear of the LORD is clean, enduring for ever: **the judgments of the LORD are true and righteous** altogether. <sup>10</sup> More to be desired are

they than gold, yea, than much fine gold: sweeter also than honey and the honeycomb. <sup>11</sup> Moreover by them is thy servant warned: and in keeping of them there is great reward.

**Jeremiah 9:23-24** - <sup>23</sup> Thus saith the LORD, Let not the wise man glory in his wisdom, neither let the mighty man glory in his might, let not the rich man glory in his riches: <sup>24</sup> But let him that glorieth glory in this, that he understandeth and knoweth me, that **I am the LORD which exercise lovingkindness, judgment, and righteousness**, in the earth: for **in these things I delight**, saith the LORD.

**Isaiah 61:8** – For I the LORD love judgment...

## God Disciplines His Children

Chasten means to discipline in order to train-up.

**1 Corinthians 11:32** - <sup>32</sup> But when we are judged, we are chastened of the Lord, that we should not be condemned with the world.

**Hebrews 12:5-11** – <sup>5</sup> And ye have forgotten the exhortation which speaketh unto you as unto children, My son, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him: <sup>6</sup> For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth. <sup>7</sup> If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not? <sup>8</sup> But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons. <sup>9</sup> Furthermore we have had fathers of our flesh which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live? <sup>10</sup> For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness. <sup>11</sup> Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby.

**Proverbs 3:11-12** – <sup>11</sup> My son, despise not the chastening of the LORD; neither be weary of his correction: <sup>12</sup> For whom the LORD loveth he correcteth; even as a father the son in whom he delighteth.

**Deuteronomy 8:5-6** – <sup>5</sup> Thou shalt also consider in thine heart, that, as a man chasteneth his son, so the LORD thy God chasteneth thee. <sup>6</sup> Therefore thou shalt keep the commandments of the LORD thy God, to walk in his ways, and to fear him.

**Revelation 3:17-21** - <sup>17</sup> Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked: <sup>18</sup> I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with eyesalve, that thou mayest see. <sup>19</sup> **As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten:** be zealous therefore, and repent. <sup>20</sup> Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me. <sup>21</sup> To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne.

**Psalms 94:8-16** – <sup>8</sup> Understand, ye brutish among the people: and ye fools, when will ye be wise? <sup>9</sup> He that planted the ear, shall he not hear? he that formed the eye, shall he not see? <sup>10</sup> He that chastiseth

the heathen, shall not he correct? he that teacheth man knowledge, shall not he know? <sup>11</sup> The LORD knoweth the thoughts of man, that they are vanity. <sup>12</sup> Blessed is the man whom thou chastenest, O LORD, and teachest him out of thy law; <sup>13</sup> That thou mayest give him rest from the days of adversity, until the pit be digged for the wicked. <sup>14</sup> For the LORD will not cast off his people, neither will he forsake his inheritance. <sup>15</sup> But judgment shall return unto righteousness: and all the upright in heart shall follow it. <sup>16</sup> Who will rise up for me against the evildoers? or who will stand up for me against the workers of iniquity?

## **Judgment of Wicked Nations**

**Deuteronomy 9:3-6** – <sup>3</sup> Understand therefore this day, that the LORD thy God is he which goeth over before thee; as a consuming fire he shall destroy them, and he shall bring them down before thy face: so shalt thou drive them out, and destroy them quickly, as the LORD hath said unto thee. <sup>4</sup> Speak not thou in thine heart, after that the LORD thy God hath cast them out from before thee, saying, For my righteousness the LORD hath brought me in to possess this land: but for the wickedness of these nations the LORD doth drive them out from before thee. <sup>5</sup> Not for thy righteousness, or for the uprightness of thine heart, dost thou go to possess their land: but for the wickedness of these nations the LORD thy God doth drive them out from before thee, and that he may perform the word which the LORD sware unto thy fathers, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. <sup>6</sup> Understand therefore, that the LORD thy God giveth thee not this good land to possess it for thy righteousness; for thou art a stiffnecked people.

## **A Nations Cup of Iniquity Must Be Filled Before They Are Judged**

**Genesis 15:13-16** – <sup>13</sup> And he said unto Abram, Know of a surety that thy seed shall be a stranger in a land that is not theirs, and shall serve them; and they shall afflict them four hundred years; <sup>14</sup> And also that nation, whom they shall serve, will I judge: and afterward shall they come out with great substance. <sup>15</sup> And thou shalt go to thy fathers in peace; thou shalt be buried in a good old age. <sup>16</sup> But in the fourth generation they shall come hither again: for the iniquity of the Amorites is not yet full.

## **God Brings A Warning**

**Amos 3:7** – Surely the Lord GOD will do nothing, but he revealeth his secret unto his servants the prophets.

**Isaiah 42:8-9** – <sup>8</sup> I am the LORD: that is my name: and my glory will I not give to another, neither my praise to graven images. <sup>9</sup> Behold, the former things are come to pass, and new things do I declare: before they spring forth I tell you of them.

**Job 33:14-18** – <sup>14</sup> For God speaketh once, yea twice, yet man perceiveth it not. <sup>15</sup> In a dream, in a vision of the night, when deep sleep falleth upon men, in slumberings upon the bed; <sup>16</sup> Then he openeth the ears of men, and sealet their instruction, <sup>17</sup> That he may withdraw man from his purpose, and hide pride from man. <sup>18</sup> He keepeth back his soul from the pit, and his life from perishing by the sword.

## God Forgives The Nation That Repents

**2 Chronicles 7:13-14** – <sup>13</sup> If I shut up heaven that there be no rain, or if I command the locusts to devour the land, or if I send pestilence among my people; <sup>14</sup> If my people, which are called by my name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek my face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land.

**Jeremiah 18:7-10** – <sup>7</sup> At what instant I shall speak concerning a nation, and concerning a kingdom, to pluck up, and to pull down, and to destroy it; <sup>8</sup> If that nation, against whom I have pronounced, turn from their evil, I will repent of the evil that I thought to do unto them. <sup>9</sup> And at what instant I shall speak concerning a nation, and concerning a kingdom, to build and to plant it; <sup>10</sup> If it do evil in my sight, that it obey not my voice, then I will repent of the good, wherewith I said I would benefit them.

## God Warned Israel

**Ezekiel 18:30-32** – <sup>30</sup> Therefore I will judge you, O house of Israel, every one according to his ways, saith the Lord GOD. Repent, and turn yourselves from all your transgressions; so iniquity shall not be your ruin. <sup>31</sup> Cast away from you all your transgressions, whereby ye have transgressed; and make you a new heart and a new spirit: for why will ye die, O house of Israel? <sup>32</sup> For I have no pleasure in the death of him that dieth, saith the Lord GOD: wherefore turn yourselves, and live ye.

**Jeremiah 26:11-13** – <sup>12</sup> Then spake Jeremiah unto all the princes and to all the people, saying, The LORD sent me to prophesy against this house and against this city all the words that ye have heard. <sup>13</sup> Therefore now amend your ways and your doings, and obey the voice of the LORD your God; and the LORD will repent him of the evil that he hath pronounced against you.

**Ezekiel 14:6-8** – <sup>6</sup> Therefore say unto the house of Israel, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Repent, and turn yourselves from your idols; and turn away your faces from all your abominations. <sup>7</sup> For every one of the house of Israel, or of the stranger that sojourneth in Israel, which separateth himself from me, and setteth up his idols in his heart, and putteth the stumblingblock of his iniquity before his face, and cometh to a prophet to enquire of him concerning me; I the LORD will answer him by myself: <sup>8</sup> And I will set my face against that man, and will make him a sign and a proverb, and I will cut him off from the midst of my people; and ye shall know that I am the LORD.

## Judgment Pronounced

**Ezekiel 24:12-14** – <sup>12</sup> She hath wearied herself with lies, and her great scum went not forth out of her: her scum shall be in the fire. <sup>13</sup> In thy filthiness is lewdness: because I have purged thee, and thou wast not purged, thou shalt not be purged from thy filthiness any more, till I have caused my fury to rest upon thee. <sup>14</sup> I the LORD have spoken it: it shall come to pass, and I will do it; I will not go back, neither will I spare, neither will I repent; according to thy ways, and according to thy doings, shall they judge thee, saith the Lord GOD.

**Hosea 7:8-16** – <sup>8</sup> Ephraim, he hath mixed himself among the people; Ephraim is a cake not turned. <sup>9</sup> Strangers have devoured his strength, and he knoweth it not: yea, gray hairs are here and there upon



him, yet he knoweth not. <sup>10</sup> And the pride of Israel testifieth to his face: and they do not return to the LORD their God, nor seek him for all this. <sup>11</sup> Ephraim also is like a silly dove without heart: they call to Egypt, they go to Assyria. <sup>12</sup> When they shall go, I will spread my net upon them; I will bring them down as the fowls of the heaven; I will chastise them, as their congregation hath heard. <sup>13</sup> Woe unto them! for they have fled from me: destruction unto them! because they have transgressed against me: though I have redeemed them, yet they have spoken lies against me. <sup>14</sup> And they have not cried unto me with their heart, when they howled upon their beds: they assemble themselves for corn and wine, and they rebel against me. <sup>15</sup> Though I have bound and strengthened their arms, yet do they imagine mischief against me. <sup>16</sup> They return, but not to the most High: they are like a deceitful bow: their princes shall fall by the sword for the rage of their tongue: this shall be their derision in the land of Egypt.

## The Example of Nineveh

**Jonah 3:3-10** – <sup>3</sup> So Jonah arose, and went unto Nineveh, according to the word of the LORD. Now Nineveh was an exceeding great city of three days' journey. <sup>4</sup> And Jonah began to enter into the city a day's journey, and he cried, and said, Yet forty days, and Nineveh shall be overthrown. <sup>5</sup> So the people of Nineveh believed God, and proclaimed a fast, and put on sackcloth, from the greatest of them even to the least of them. <sup>6</sup> For word came unto the king of Nineveh, and he arose from his throne, and he laid his robe from him, and covered him with sackcloth, and sat in ashes. <sup>7</sup> And he caused it to be proclaimed and published through Nineveh by the decree of the king and his nobles, saying, Let neither man nor beast, herd nor flock, taste any thing: let them not feed, nor drink water: <sup>8</sup> But let man and beast be covered with sackcloth, and cry mightily unto God: yea, let them turn every one from his evil way, and from the violence that is in their hands. <sup>9</sup> Who can tell if God will turn and repent, and turn away from his fierce anger, that we perish not? <sup>10</sup> And God saw their works, that they turned from their evil way; and God repented of the evil, that he had said that he would do unto them; and he did it not.

**Jeremiah 26:19** – Did Hezekiah king of Judah and all Judah put him at all to death? did he not fear the LORD, and besought the LORD, and the LORD repented him of the evil which he had pronounced against them? Thus might we procure great evil against our souls.

## God Preserves And Protects A Faithful Remnant

God reveals his judgments to the prophets so the prophets can warn the people that God loves. This warning is intended for everyone because God loves everyone and desires that none perish. God's warnings which He sends through his prophets are intended to bring change within a nation so that the judgment can be withdrawn. God is looking for people to change their lives, to stop sinning. Specifically, they must: accept the Father in heaven as their one and only God; they must accept Jesus Christ as their savior; they must accept his law as holy; and they must confess and repent of their sins. Repent means to be truly sorry for your sins and to turn away from sin with the true desire to stop sinning. If an individual or nation does these, they can prevent Gods judgment.

Even when a nation refuses to repent, God protects his own. What purpose would it serve God to judge his faithful followers? It would serve no purpose. God's judgments are true and righteous.<sup>1</sup> Therefore these judgments are not intended for his faithful followers. In Proverbs, King Solomon writes: "It is not good...to overthrow the righteous in judgment" (Proverbs 18:5). During the flood, God

preserved Noah and his family in the ark.<sup>ii</sup> When God destroyed Sodom and Gomorra, he sent Angels to deliver Lot and his family.<sup>iii</sup> Each time that God judged Israel he saved and left a remnant.<sup>iv</sup> In Ezekiel God specifically marked his remnant in the forehead and ordered that they should be preserved. This remnant was sorrowful concerning the sin that was being done by their countrymen.

## Summary

God is love, it is his very being. God is pure and holy and desires only that, which is pure, holy, righteous and just. He is merciful and slow to anger. He desires the salvation of all the people of the earth.

God longs to bless his righteous followers, to answer their prayers and grant them the desires of their heart. He is delighted in the righteous acts of his faithful followers, acts of truth, charity, mercy and justice. But he is also saddened by those who have rejected him and have rejected the saving grace of his Son, Jesus Christ. For this reason the Lord God of heaven delights in exercising loving judgment. He delight in it because judgment leads people to repentance and therefore salvation.

God uses judgment on both individuals and nations. Chastening is a type of minor judgment that God uses to train His sons and daughters in the way they should go. God uses more severe judgments on non-repentant individuals and nations in order to lead them to repentance. God brings judgment on individuals and nations to lead them to repentance because he loves them. Without judgment they would be eternally lost.

God loves judgment because, through judgment he is able to open the eyes, ears and hearts of his lost children and turn them heaven ward. He turns them toward their Father who is calling them to offer them forgiveness, salvation and eternal life through the saving grace of Jesus Christ. Those who hear his call and desire the salvation of his Son Jesus Christ must: accept his law and judgments as holy and just; they must confess their sins; they must repent; they must accept the saving grace of Jesus Christ; they must profess the name of the Lord Jesus Christ and they must be baptized. Any person who does these things receives the righteousness of Christ (his sinless character) and eternal life through the saving grace of Jesus Christ. These are free gifts.

When nation continually reject God's warning judgments, their cup of iniquity eventually becomes filled. When a nations cup of iniquity is filled, God eventually destroys the nation. Before God destroys a nation, he brings a warning through His prophets. God uses prophets today just as he did in the past. If an individual or nation repents, God will forgive. Nineveh is the perfect example, the nation repented and God spared the nation.

Even when God destroys a nation, He protects His own. The Word of God states: "It is not good... to overthrow the righteous in judgment" (Proverbs 18:5). When God judges a nation, he will protect his faithful. Ezekiel prophesied the destruction of Jerusalem. God set his hand of protection upon all the faithful who cried over the sins of Jerusalem (Ezekiel 9). God protects His faithful today just as He did in the past!

## #23

# Who Are The Jews

As we shall see from the word of God, there is a physical Israel and a spiritual Israel. Physical Israel are those people who are blood descendants of Abraham. Spiritual Israel are those who are heirs according to the promise gave to Abraham. Jesus Christ was the promised seed of Abraham. Those who are Christ's, are heirs according to the promise and make up the body of spiritual Israel.

## The Promise Given To Abraham

**Genesis 12:1-3** – <sup>1</sup> Now the LORD had said unto Abram, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house, unto a land that I will shew thee: <sup>2</sup> And I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing: <sup>3</sup> And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee: and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed.

**Genesis 17:1-7** – <sup>1</sup> And when Abram was ninety years old and nine, the LORD appeared to Abram, and said unto him, I am the Almighty God; walk before me, and be thou perfect. <sup>2</sup> And I will make my covenant between me and thee, and will multiply thee exceedingly. <sup>3</sup> And Abram fell on his face: and God talked with him, saying, <sup>4</sup> As for me, behold, my covenant is with thee, and thou shalt be a father of many nations. <sup>5</sup> Neither shall thy name any more be called Abram, but thy name shall be Abraham; for a father of many nations have I made thee. <sup>6</sup> And I will make thee exceeding fruitful, and I will make nations of thee, and kings shall come out of thee. <sup>7</sup> And I will establish my covenant between me and thee and thy seed after thee in their generations for an everlasting covenant, to be a God unto thee, and to thy seed after thee.

**Genesis 17:20-21** – <sup>20</sup> And as for Ishmael, I have heard thee: Behold, I have blessed him, and will make him fruitful, and will multiply him exceedingly; twelve princes shall he beget, and I will make him a great nation. <sup>21</sup> But my covenant will I establish with Isaac, which Sarah shall bear unto thee at this set time in the next year.

## Isaac Father of Jacob and Esau

**Genesis 25:19-26** – <sup>19</sup> And these are the generations of Isaac, Abraham's son: Abraham begat Isaac: <sup>20</sup> And Isaac was forty years old when he took Rebekah to wife, the daughter of Bethuel the Syrian of Padanaram, the sister to Laban the Syrian. <sup>21</sup> And Isaac intreated the LORD for his wife, because she was barren: and the LORD was intreated of him, and Rebekah his wife conceived. <sup>22</sup> And the children struggled together within her; and she said, If it be so, why am I thus? And she went to enquire of the LORD. <sup>23</sup> And the LORD said unto her, Two nations are in thy womb, and two manner of people shall be separated from thy bowels; and the one people shall be stronger than the other people; and the elder shall serve the younger. <sup>24</sup> And when her days to be delivered were fulfilled, behold, there were twins in her womb. <sup>25</sup> And the first came out red, all over like a hairy garment; and

they called his name Esau. <sup>26</sup> And after that came his brother out, and his hand took hold on Esau's heel; and his name was called Jacob: and Isaac was threescore years old when she bare them.

**Hebrews 12:15-17** – <sup>16</sup> Lest there be any fornicator, or profane person, as Esau, who for one morsel of meat sold his birthright. <sup>17</sup> For ye know how that afterward, when he would have inherited the blessing, he was rejected: for he found no place of repentance, though he sought it carefully with tears.

## Israel And His Twelve Sons – The Twelve tribes

**Genesis 32:28** – <sup>28</sup> And he said, Thy name shall be called no more Jacob, but Israel: for as a prince hast thou power with God and with men, and hast prevailed.

**1 Chronicles 2:1-2** – <sup>1</sup> These are the sons of Israel; Reuben, Simeon, Levi, and Judah, Issachar, and Zebulun, <sup>2</sup> Dan, Joseph, and Benjamin, Naphtali, Gad, and Asher.

**Genesis 35:22-26** – <sup>22</sup> ...Now the sons of Jacob were twelve: <sup>23</sup> The sons of Leah; Reuben, Jacob's firstborn, and Simeon, and Levi, and Judah, and Issachar, and Zebulun: <sup>24</sup> The sons of Rachel; Joseph, and Benjamin: <sup>25</sup> And the sons of Bilhah, Rachel's handmaid; Dan, and Naphtali: <sup>26</sup> And the sons of Zilpah, Leah's handmaid; Gad, and Asher: these are the sons of Jacob, which were born to him in Padanaram.

## A Nation Divided

**2 Samuel 2:4** – <sup>4</sup> And the men of Judah came, and there they anointed David king over the house of Judah....

**2 Samuel 2:8-11** – <sup>8</sup> But Abner the son of Ner, captain of Saul's host, took Ishbosheth the son of Saul, and brought him over to Mahanaim; <sup>9</sup> And made him king over Gilead, and over the Ashurites, and over Jezreel, and over Ephraim, and over Benjamin, and over all Israel. <sup>10</sup> Ishbosheth Saul's son *was* forty years old when he began to reign over Israel, and reigned two years. But the house of Judah followed David. <sup>11</sup> And the time that David was king in Hebron over the house of Judah was seven years and six months.

## A Civil War

**2 Samuel 3:1** – <sup>1</sup> Now there was long war between the house of Saul and the house of David: but David waxed stronger and stronger, and the house of Saul waxed weaker and weaker.

**2 Samuel 4:5-7** – <sup>5</sup> And the sons of Rimmon the Beerothite, Rechab and Baanah, went, and came about the heat of the day to the house of Ishbosheth, who lay on a bed at noon. <sup>6</sup> And they came thither into the midst of the house, as though they would have fetched wheat; and they smote him under the fifth rib: and Rechab and Baanah his brother escaped. <sup>7</sup> For when they came into the house, he lay on his bed in his bedchamber, and they smote him, and slew him, and beheaded him, and took his head, and gat them away through the plain all night.

## A Nation United

**2 Samuel 5:1-4** – <sup>1</sup> Then came all the tribes of Israel to David unto Hebron, and spake, saying, Behold, we are thy bone and thy flesh. <sup>2</sup> Also in time past, when Saul was king over us, thou wast he that leddest out and broughtest in Israel: and the LORD said to thee, Thou shalt feed my people Israel, and thou shalt be a captain over Israel. <sup>3</sup> So all the elders of Israel came to the king to Hebron; and king David made a league with them in Hebron before the LORD: and they anointed David king over Israel. <sup>4</sup> David was thirty years old when he began to reign, and he reigned forty years.

## A Nation Re-Divided

**1 Kings 11:43** – And Solomon slept with his fathers, and was buried in the city of David his father: and Rehoboam his son reigned in his stead.

**1 Kings 12** – <sup>1</sup> And Rehoboam went to Shechem: for all Israel were come to Shechem to make him king. <sup>2</sup> And it came to pass, when Jeroboam the son of Nebat, who was yet in Egypt, heard of it, (for he was fled from the presence of king Solomon, and Jeroboam dwelt in Egypt;) <sup>3</sup> That they sent and called him. And Jeroboam and all the congregation of Israel came, and spake unto Rehoboam, saying, <sup>4</sup> Thy father made our yoke grievous: now therefore make thou the grievous service of thy father, and his heavy yoke which he put upon us, lighter, and we will serve thee. <sup>5</sup> And he said unto them, Depart yet for three days, then come again to me. And the people departed. <sup>6</sup> And king Rehoboam consulted with the old men, that stood before Solomon his father while he yet lived, and said, How do ye advise that I may answer this people? <sup>7</sup> And they spake unto him, saying, If thou wilt be a servant unto this people this day, and wilt serve them, and answer them, and speak good words to them, then they will be thy servants for ever. <sup>8</sup> But he forsook the counsel of the old men, which they had given him, and consulted with the young men that were grown up with him, and which stood before him: <sup>9</sup> And he said unto them, What counsel give ye that we may answer this people, who have spoken to me, saying, Make the yoke which thy father did put upon us lighter? <sup>10</sup> And the young men that were grown up with him spake unto him, saying, Thus shalt thou speak unto this people that spake unto thee, saying, Thy father made our yoke heavy, but make thou it lighter unto us; thus shalt thou say unto them, My little finger shall be thicker than my father's loins. <sup>11</sup> And now whereas my father did lade you with a heavy yoke, I will add to your yoke: my father hath chastised you with whips, but I will chastise you with scorpions. <sup>12</sup> So Jeroboam and all the people came to Rehoboam the third day, as the king had appointed, saying, Come to me again the third day. <sup>13</sup> And the king answered the people roughly, and forsook the old men's counsel that they gave him; <sup>14</sup> And spake to them after the counsel of the young men, saying, My father made your yoke heavy, and I will add to your yoke: my father also chastised you with whips, but I will chastise you with scorpions. <sup>15</sup> Wherefore the king hearkened not unto the people; for the cause was from the LORD, that he might perform his saying, which the LORD spake by Ahijah the Shilonite unto Jeroboam the son of Nebat.

<sup>16</sup> So when all Israel saw that the king hearkened not unto them, the people answered the king, saying, What portion have we in David? neither have we inheritance in the son of Jesse: to your tents, O Israel: now see to thine own house, David. So Israel departed unto their tents. <sup>17</sup> But as for the children of Israel which dwelt in the cities of Judah, Rehoboam reigned over them. <sup>18</sup> Then king Rehoboam sent Adoram, who was over the tribute; and all Israel stoned him with stones, that he died.

Therefore king Rehoboam made speed to get him up to his chariot, to flee to Jerusalem. <sup>19</sup> So Israel rebelled<sup>b</sup> against the house of David unto this day. <sup>20</sup> And it came to pass, when all Israel heard that Jeroboam was come again, that they sent and called him unto the congregation, and made him king over all Israel: there was none that followed the house of David, but the tribe of Judah only. <sup>21</sup> And when Rehoboam was come to Jerusalem, he assembled all the house of Judah, with the tribe of Benjamin, an hundred and fourscore thousand chosen men, which were warriors, to fight against the house of Israel, to bring the kingdom again to Rehoboam the son of Solomon. <sup>22</sup> But the word of God came unto Shemaiah the man of God, saying, <sup>23</sup> Speak unto Rehoboam, the son of Solomon, king of Judah, and unto all the house of Judah and Benjamin, and to the remnant of the people, saying, <sup>24</sup> Thus saith the LORD, Ye shall not go up, nor fight against your brethren the children of Israel: return every man to his house; for this thing is from me. They hearkened therefore to the word of the LORD, and returned to depart, according to the word of the LORD.

<sup>25</sup> Then Jeroboam built Shechem in mount Ephraim, and dwelt therein; and went out from thence, and built Penuel. <sup>26</sup> And Jeroboam said in his heart, Now shall the kingdom return to the house of David: <sup>27</sup> If this people go up to do sacrifice in the house of the LORD at Jerusalem, then shall the heart of this people turn again unto their lord, even unto Rehoboam king of Judah, and they shall kill me, and go again to Rehoboam king of Judah. <sup>28</sup> Whereupon the king took counsel, and made two calves of gold, and said unto them, It is too much for you to go up to Jerusalem: behold thy gods, O Israel, which brought thee up out of the land of Egypt. <sup>29</sup> And he set the one in Bethel, and the other put he in Dan. <sup>30</sup> And this thing became a sin: for the people went to worship before the one, even unto Dan. <sup>31</sup> And he made an house of high places, and made priests of the lowest of the people, which were not of the sons of Levi. <sup>32</sup> And Jeroboam ordained a feast in the eighth month, on the fifteenth day of the month, like unto the feast that is in Judah, and he offered upon the altar. So did he in Bethel, sacrificing unto the calves that he had made: and he placed in Bethel the priests of the high places which he had made. <sup>33</sup> So he offered upon the altar which he had made in Bethel the fifteenth day of the eighth month, even in the month which he had devised of his own heart; and ordained a feast unto the children of Israel: and he offered upon the altar, and burnt incense.

## **The Northern Ten Tribes Carried Into Captivity**

**2 Kings 17:1-23** – <sup>1</sup> In the twelfth year of Ahaz king of Judah began Hoshea the son of Elah to reign in Samaria over Israel nine years. <sup>2</sup> And he did that which was evil in the sight of the LORD, but not as the kings of Israel that were before him. <sup>3</sup> Against him came up Shalmaneser king of Assyria; and Hoshea became his servant, and gave him presents. <sup>4</sup> And the king of Assyria found conspiracy in Hoshea: for he had sent messengers to So king of Egypt, and brought no present to the king of Assyria, as he had done year by year: therefore the king of Assyria shut him up, and bound him in prison. <sup>5</sup> Then the king of Assyria came up throughout all the land, and went up to Samaria, and besieged it three years. <sup>6</sup> In the ninth year of Hoshea the king of Assyria took Samaria, and carried Israel away into Assyria, and placed them in Halah and in Habor by the river of Gozan, and in the cities of the Medes.

<sup>7</sup> For so it was, that the children of Israel had sinned against the LORD their God, which had brought them up out of the land of Egypt, from under the hand of Pharaoh king of Egypt, and had feared other gods, <sup>8</sup> And walked in the statutes of the heathen, whom the LORD cast out from before

the children of Israel, and of the kings of Israel, which they had made. <sup>9</sup> And the children of Israel did secretly those things that were not right against the LORD their God, and they built them high places in all their cities, from the tower of the watchmen to the fenced city. <sup>10</sup> And they set them up images and groves in every high hill, and under every green tree: <sup>11</sup> And there they burnt incense in all the high places, as did the heathen whom the LORD carried away before them; and wrought wicked things to provoke the LORD to anger: <sup>12</sup> For they served idols, whereof the LORD had said unto them, Ye shall not do this thing. <sup>13</sup> Yet the LORD testified against Israel, and against Judah, by all the prophets, and by all the seers, saying, Turn ye from your evil ways, and keep my commandments and my statutes, according to all the law which I commanded your fathers, and which I sent to you by my servants the prophets. <sup>14</sup> Notwithstanding they would not hear, but hardened their necks, like to the neck of their fathers, that did not believe in the LORD their God. <sup>15</sup> And they rejected his statutes, and his covenant that he made with their fathers, and his testimonies which he testified against them; and they followed vanity, and became vain, and went after the heathen that were round about them, concerning whom the LORD had charged them, that they should not do like them. <sup>16</sup> And they left all the commandments of the LORD their God, and made them molten images, even two calves, and made a grove, and worshipped all the host of heaven, and served Baal. <sup>17</sup> And they caused their sons and their daughters to pass through the fire, and used divination and enchantments, and sold themselves to do evil in the sight of the LORD, to provoke him to anger. <sup>18</sup> Therefore the LORD was very angry with Israel, and removed them out of his sight: there was none left but the tribe of Judah only. <sup>19</sup> Also Judah kept not the commandments of the LORD their God, but walked in the statutes of Israel which they made. <sup>20</sup> And the LORD rejected all the seed of Israel, and afflicted them, and delivered them into the hand of spoilers, until he had cast them out of his sight. <sup>21</sup> For he rent Israel from the house of David; and they made Jeroboam the son of Nebat king: and Jeroboam drave Israel from following the LORD, and made them sin a great sin. <sup>22</sup> For the children of Israel walked in all the sins of Jeroboam which he did; they departed not from them; <sup>23</sup> Until the LORD removed Israel out of his sight, as he had said by all his servants the prophets. So was Israel carried away out of their own land to Assyria unto this day.

## **Judah and Benjamin Carried Away Captive to Babylon**

**2 Kings 24** – <sup>1</sup> In his days Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon came up, and Jehoiakim became his servant three years: then he turned and rebelled against him. <sup>2</sup> And the LORD sent against him bands of the Chaldees, and bands of the Syrians, and bands of the Moabites, and bands of the children of Ammon, and sent them against Judah to destroy it, according to the word of the LORD, which he spake by his servants the prophets. <sup>3</sup> Surely at the commandment of the LORD came this upon Judah, to remove them out of his sight, for the sins of Manasseh, according to all that he did; <sup>4</sup> And also for the innocent blood that he shed: for he filled Jerusalem with innocent blood; which the LORD would not pardon. <sup>5</sup> Now the rest of the acts of Jehoiakim, and all that he did, are they not written in the book of the chronicles of the kings of Judah? <sup>6</sup> So Jehoiakim slept with his fathers: and Jehoiachin his son reigned in his stead. <sup>7</sup> And the king of Egypt came not again any more out of his land: for the king of Babylon had taken from the river of Egypt unto the river Euphrates all that pertained to the king of Egypt.

<sup>8</sup> Jehoiachin was eighteen years old when he began to reign, and he reigned in Jerusalem three months. And his mother's name was Nehushta, the daughter of Elnathan of Jerusalem. <sup>9</sup> And he did

that which was evil in the sight of the LORD, according to all that his father had done. <sup>10</sup> At that time the servants of Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon came up against Jerusalem, and the city was besieged. <sup>11</sup> And Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon came against the city, and his servants did besiege it. <sup>12</sup> And Jehoiachin the king of Judah went out to the king of Babylon, he, and his mother, and his servants, and his princes, and his officers<sup>c</sup>: and the king of Babylon took him in the eighth year of his reign. <sup>13</sup> And he carried out thence all the treasures of the house of the LORD, and the treasures of the king's house, and cut in pieces all the vessels of gold which Solomon king of Israel had made in the temple of the LORD, as the LORD had said. <sup>14</sup> And he carried away all Jerusalem, and all the princes, and all the mighty men of valour, even ten thousand captives, and all the craftsmen and smiths: none remained, save the poorest sort of the people of the land. <sup>15</sup> And he carried away Jehoiachin to Babylon, and the king's mother, and the king's wives, and his officers, and the mighty of the land, those carried he into captivity from Jerusalem to Babylon. <sup>16</sup> And all the men of might, even seven thousand, and craftsmen and smiths a thousand, all that were strong and apt for war, even them the king of Babylon brought captive to Babylon. <sup>17</sup> And the king of Babylon made Mattaniah his father's brother king in his stead, and changed his name to Zedekiah. <sup>18</sup> Zedekiah was twenty and one years old when he began to reign, and he reigned eleven years in Jerusalem. And his mother's name was Hamutal, the daughter of Jeremiah of Libnah. <sup>19</sup> And he did that which was evil in the sight of the LORD, according to all that Jehoiakim had done. <sup>20</sup> For through the anger of the LORD it came to pass in Jerusalem and Judah, until he had cast them out from his presence, that Zedekiah rebelled against the king of Babylon.

## The Return To Jerusalem

Ezra 11:1-5 – <sup>1</sup> Now in the first year of Cyrus king of Persia, that the word of the LORD by the mouth of Jeremiah might be fulfilled, the LORD stirred up the spirit of Cyrus king of Persia, that he made a proclamation throughout all his kingdom, and put it also in writing, saying, <sup>2</sup> Thus saith Cyrus king of Persia, The LORD God of heaven hath given me all the kingdoms of the earth; and he hath charged me to build him an house at Jerusalem, which is in Judah. <sup>3</sup> Who is there among you of all his people? his God be with him, and let him go up to Jerusalem, which is in Judah, and build the house of the LORD God of Israel, (he is the God,) which is in Jerusalem. <sup>4</sup> And whosoever remaineth in any place where he sojourneth, let the men of his place help him with silver, and with gold, and with goods, and with beasts, beside the freewill offering for the house of God that is in Jerusalem. <sup>5</sup> Then rose up the chief of the fathers of Judah and Benjamin, and the priests, and the Levites, with all them whose spirit God had raised, to go up to build the house of the LORD which is in Jerusalem.

## Jesus Was A Jew

**Matthew 1:1** – <sup>1</sup> The book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham.

**Luke 1:26-33** – <sup>26</sup> And in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from God unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth, <sup>27</sup> To a virgin espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgin's name was Mary. <sup>28</sup> And the angel came in unto her, and said, Hail, thou that art highly favoured, the Lord is with thee: blessed art thou among women. <sup>29</sup> And when she saw him, she



was troubled at his saying, and cast in her mind what manner of salutation this should be. <sup>30</sup> And the angel said unto her, Fear not, Mary: for thou hast found favour with God. <sup>31</sup> And, behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name JESUS. <sup>32</sup> He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David: <sup>33</sup> And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end.

## The Destruction of Jerusalem

**1 Thessalonians 2:14-16** – <sup>14</sup> For ye, brethren, became followers of the churches of God which in Judaea are in Christ Jesus: for ye also have suffered like things of your own countrymen, even as they have of the Jews: <sup>15</sup> Who both killed the Lord Jesus, and their own prophets, and have persecuted us; and they please not God, and are contrary to all men: <sup>16</sup> Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles that they might be saved, to fill up their sins alway: for the wrath is come upon them to the uttermost.

**Luke 21:20-24** - <sup>20</sup> And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh. <sup>21</sup> Then let them which are in Judaea flee to the mountains; and let them which are in the midst of it depart out; and let not them that are in the countries enter thereinto. <sup>22</sup> For these be the days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled. <sup>23</sup> But woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck, in those days! for there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath upon this people. <sup>24</sup> And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

## A Jewish Remnant

**Romans 11:1-5** – <sup>1</sup> I say then, Hath God cast away his people? God forbid. For I also am an Israelite, of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin. <sup>2</sup> God hath not cast away his people which he foreknew. Wot ye not what the scripture saith of Elias? how he maketh intercession to God against Israel, saying, <sup>3</sup> Lord, they have killed thy prophets, and digged down thine altars; and I am left alone, and they seek my life. <sup>4</sup> But what saith the answer of God unto him? I have reserved to myself seven thousand men, who have not bowed the knee to the image of Baal. <sup>5</sup> Even so then at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace.

## Spiritual Israel

**Romans 2:28-29** – <sup>28</sup> For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: <sup>29</sup> But **he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter**; whose praise is not of men, but of God.

**Romans 4:16-17** – <sup>16</sup> Therefore it is of faith, that it might be by grace; to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed; not to that only which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham; who is the father of us all, <sup>17</sup> (As it is written, I have made thee a father of many nations,)

before him whom he believed, even God, who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not as though they were.

**Romans 9:23-24** – <sup>23</sup> And that he might make known the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy, which he had afore prepared unto glory, <sup>24</sup> Even us, whom he hath called, not of the Jews only, but also of the Gentiles?

**Galatians 3:13-14** - <sup>13</sup> Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree: <sup>14</sup> **That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ**; that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.

**Galatians 3:16** - <sup>16</sup> Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ.

**Galatians 3:27-29** – <sup>27</sup> For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ. <sup>28</sup> There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus. <sup>29</sup> **And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.**

**Romans 11:16-29** – <sup>16</sup> For if the firstfruit be holy, the lump is also holy: and if the root be holy, so are the branches. <sup>17</sup> And if some of the branches be broken off, and thou, being a wild olive tree, wert grafted in among them, and with them partakest of the root and fatness of the olive tree; <sup>18</sup> Boast not against the branches. But if thou boast, thou bearest not the root, but the root thee. <sup>19</sup> Thou wilt say then, The branches were broken off, that I might be grafted in. <sup>20</sup> Well; because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not highminded, but fear: <sup>21</sup> For if God spared not the natural branches, take heed lest he also spare not thee. <sup>22</sup> Behold therefore the goodness and severity of God: on them which fell, severity; but toward thee, goodness, if thou continue in his goodness: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off. <sup>23</sup> And they also, if they abide not still in unbelief, shall be grafted in: for God is able to graff them in again. <sup>24</sup> For if thou wert cut out of the olive tree which is wild by nature, and wert grafted contrary to nature into a good olive tree: how much more shall these, which be the natural branches, be grafted into their own olive tree? <sup>25</sup> For I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this mystery, lest ye should be wise in your own conceits; that blindness in part is happened to Israel, until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in. <sup>26</sup> And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob: <sup>27</sup> For this is my covenant unto them, when I shall take away their sins.

## **The Mantle of Israel Passed To A New Nation**

**Matthew 21:43** – <sup>43</sup> Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof.

## **Additional Jewish History**

Beginning as a nation in Egypt (Exodus 1:12, 20).

Afflicted in Egypt (Exodus1:12-22).  
Moses becomes their leader (Exodus 3:1-22).  
Saved from plagues (Exodus 9:4, 6, 26).  
Leave Egypt (Exodus12:29-26).  
Pass through the Red Sea (Exodus14:1-31).  
Receive the Law at Mount Sinai (Exodus19:1-25).  
Wander in the wilderness 40 years (Numbers 14:26-39).  
Cross the Jordan into the Promised Land (Joshua 4:1-24).  
Conquer the land of Canaan (Joshua 12:1-24).  
Ruled by the judges of Israel (Judges 2:1-23).  
Samuel The Prophet leads Israel (1 Samuel 7:1-17).  
Israel seeks to have a king (1 Samuel 8:1-22).  
Saul becomes the first king (1 Samuel 10:18-27).

## Summary

Israelites, commonly referred to as Jews, are the descendants of Jacob. Jacob was Abraham's grandson. Jacob had twelve sons that each represented one of the twelve tribes of Israel. Christians are members of spiritual Israel. They are heirs to the promise given to Abraham by God. Jesus was the promised seed of Abraham and Christians are heirs through Jesus Christ.

While Christians are heirs to the promise God gave Abraham, many forget the Christian church includes physical members of Israel. These include all the original members of the Christian church.

Israel was continually judged by God because of their wickedness. During the reign of King Hoshea, the ten northern tribes were taken captive. They were relocated never to return. Only recently, some claiming to be members of the ten lost tribes have returned to Israel. The Christian church most certainly includes many Israelites who have lost track of their heritage through thousands of years.

During the time of Jesus, Israel was made up of the two southern tribes which included Judah and Benjamin. The Israelites have been called Jews since this time. The vast majority of the Jews rejected Jesus as the Messiah. For this reason God judged Israel and destroyed Jerusalem in 70 AD.

God needed a nation to fulfill the role of Israel. He needed a nation that would serve Him and Jesus Christ. God needed a nation that would be an example to all the world, a nation whom he could bless for their faithfulness. He also needed a nation who would spread the gospel to the world.

Jesus told the Jews: "The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof." (Matthew 21:43) The only nation fulfilling the prophecy of Jesus is the United States of America. But like Israel, the USA has abandoned God. Because of God's love for America, he must eventually judge it for its wickedness.

## #24

# Israel Judged

Why does it matter what happened to Israel? King Solomon is the wisest man to have ever lived. He writes: "The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be; and that which is done is that which shall be done: and there is no new thing under the sun." (Ecclesiastes 1:9) Speaking of Israel, the Apostle Paul writes: "Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come." (1 Corinthians 10:11)

What happened to the nation of Israel is an example to us of what will happen to any people that repeat their mistakes. In fact, the mistakes of Israel shall be repeated and so shall their fate.

## The Blessings of Obedience

**Leviticus 26:1-13** – <sup>1</sup> Ye shall make you no idols nor graven image, neither rear you up a standing image, neither shall ye set up any image of stone in your land, to bow down unto it: for I am the LORD your God. <sup>2</sup> Ye shall keep my sabbaths, and reverence my sanctuary: I am the LORD. <sup>3</sup> If ye walk in my statutes, and keep my commandments, and do them; <sup>4</sup> Then I will give you rain in due season, and the land shall yield her increase, and the trees of the field shall yield their fruit. <sup>5</sup> And your threshing shall reach unto the vintage, and the vintage shall reach unto the sowing time: and ye shall eat your bread to the full, and dwell in your land safely. <sup>6</sup> And I will give peace in the land, and ye shall lie down, and none shall make you afraid: and I will rid<sup>a</sup> evil beasts out of the land, neither shall the sword go through your land. <sup>7</sup> And ye shall chase your enemies, and they shall fall before you by the sword. <sup>8</sup> And five of you shall chase an hundred, and an hundred of you shall put ten thousand to flight: and your enemies shall fall before you by the sword. <sup>9</sup> For I will have respect unto you, and make you fruitful, and multiply you, and establish my covenant with you. <sup>10</sup> And ye shall eat old store, and bring forth the old because of the new. <sup>11</sup> And I will set my tabernacle among you: and my soul shall not abhor you. <sup>12</sup> And I will walk among you, and will be your God, and ye shall be my people. <sup>13</sup> I am the LORD your God, which brought you forth out of the land of Egypt, that ye should not be their bondmen; and I have broken the bands of your yoke, and made you go upright.

## The Curse of Disobedience

**Leviticus 26:14-33** – <sup>14</sup> But if ye will not hearken unto me, and will not do all these commandments; <sup>15</sup> And if ye shall despise my statutes, or if your soul abhor my judgments, so that ye will not do all my commandments, but that ye break my covenant: <sup>16</sup> I also will do this unto you; I will even appoint over you terror, consumption, and the burning ague, that shall consume the eyes, and cause sorrow of heart: and ye shall sow your seed in vain, for your enemies shall eat it. <sup>17</sup> And I will set my face against you, and ye shall be slain before your enemies: they that hate you shall reign over you; and ye shall flee when none pursueth you. <sup>18</sup> And if ye will not yet for all this hearken unto me, then I will punish you seven times more for your sins. <sup>19</sup> And I will break the pride of your power; and

I will make your heaven as iron, and your earth as brass: <sup>20</sup> And your strength shall be spent in vain: for your land shall not yield her increase, neither shall the trees of the land yield their fruits. <sup>21</sup> And if ye walk contrary unto me, and will not hearken unto me; I will bring seven times more plagues upon you according to your sins. <sup>22</sup> I will also send wild beasts among you, which shall rob you of your children, and destroy your cattle, and make you few in number; and your high ways shall be desolate. <sup>23</sup> And if ye will not be reformed by me by these things, but will walk contrary unto me; <sup>24</sup> Then will I also walk contrary unto you, and will punish you yet seven times for your sins. <sup>25</sup> And I will bring a sword upon you, that shall avenge the quarrel of my covenant: and when ye are gathered together within your cities, I will send the pestilence among you; and ye shall be delivered into the hand of the enemy. <sup>26</sup> And when I have broken the staff of your bread, ten women shall bake your bread in one oven, and they shall deliver you your bread again by weight: and ye shall eat, and not be satisfied. <sup>27</sup> And if ye will not for all this hearken unto me, but walk contrary unto me; <sup>28</sup> Then I will walk contrary unto you also in fury; and I, even I, will chastise you seven times for your sins. <sup>29</sup> And ye shall eat the flesh of your sons, and the flesh of your daughters shall ye eat. <sup>30</sup> And I will destroy your high places, and cut down your images, and cast your carcasses upon the carcasses of your idols, and my soul shall abhor you. <sup>31</sup> And I will make your cities waste, and bring your sanctuaries unto desolation, and I will not smell the savour of your sweet odours. <sup>32</sup> And I will bring the land into desolation: and your enemies which dwell therein shall be astonished at it. <sup>33</sup> And I will scatter you among the heathen, and will draw out a sword after you: and your land shall be desolate, and your cities waste.

**Leviticus 26:36-38** – <sup>36</sup> And upon them that are left alive of you I will send a faintness into their hearts in the lands of their enemies; and the sound of a shaken leaf shall chase them; and they shall flee, as fleeing from a sword; and they shall fall when none pursueth. <sup>37</sup> And they shall fall one upon another, as it were before a sword, when none pursueth: and ye shall have no power to stand before your enemies. <sup>38</sup> And ye shall perish among the heathen, and the land of your enemies shall eat you up.

**Deuteronomy 28:15-46** – <sup>15</sup> But it shall come to pass, if thou wilt not hearken unto the voice of the LORD thy God, to observe to do all his commandments and his statutes which I command thee this day; that all these curses shall come upon thee, and overtake thee: <sup>16</sup> Cursed shalt thou be in the city, and cursed shalt thou be in the field. <sup>17</sup> Cursed shall be thy basket and thy store. <sup>18</sup> Cursed shall be the fruit of thy body, and the fruit of thy land, the increase of thy kine, and the flocks of thy sheep. <sup>19</sup> Cursed shalt thou be when thou comest in, and cursed shalt thou be when thou goest out. <sup>20</sup> The LORD shall send upon thee cursing, vexation, and rebuke, in all that thou settest thine hand unto for to do, until thou be destroyed, and until thou perish quickly; because of the wickedness of thy doings, whereby thou hast forsaken me. <sup>21</sup> The LORD shall make the pestilence cleave unto thee, until he have consumed thee from off the land, whither thou goest to possess it. <sup>22</sup> The LORD shall smite thee with a consumption, and with a fever, and with an inflammation, and with an extreme burning, and with the sword, and with blasting, and with mildew; and they shall pursue thee until thou perish. <sup>23</sup> And thy heaven that is over thy head shall be brass, and the earth that is under thee shall be iron. <sup>24</sup> The LORD shall make the rain of thy land powder and dust: from heaven shall it come down upon thee, until thou be destroyed. <sup>25</sup> The LORD shall cause thee to be smitten before thine enemies: thou shalt go out one way against them, and flee seven ways before them: and shalt be removed into all the kingdoms of the earth. <sup>26</sup> And thy carcase shall be meat unto all fowls of the air, and unto the beasts of the earth, and no man shall fray them away. <sup>27</sup> The LORD will smite thee with the botch of Egypt, and with the emerods, and with the scab, and with the itch, whereof thou canst not be healed. <sup>28</sup> The LORD

shall smite thee with madness, and blindness, and astonishment of heart: <sup>29</sup> And thou shalt grope at noonday, as the blind gropeth in darkness, and thou shalt not prosper in thy ways: and thou shalt be only oppressed and spoiled evermore, and no man shall save thee. <sup>30</sup> Thou shalt betroth a wife, and another man shall lie with her: thou shalt build an house, and thou shalt not dwell therein: thou shalt plant a vineyard, and shalt not gather the grapes thereof. <sup>31</sup> Thine ox shall be slain before thine eyes, and thou shalt not eat thereof: thine ass shall be violently taken away from before thy face, and shall not be restored to thee: thy sheep shall be given unto thine enemies, and thou shalt have none to rescue them. <sup>32</sup> Thy sons and thy daughters shall be given unto another people, and thine eyes shall look, and fail with longing for them all the day long: and there shall be no might in thine hand. <sup>33</sup> The fruit of thy land, and all thy labours, shall a nation which thou knowest not eat up; and thou shalt be only oppressed and crushed alway: <sup>34</sup> So that thou shalt be mad for the sight of thine eyes which thou shalt see. <sup>35</sup> The LORD shall smite thee in the knees, and in the legs, with a sore botch that cannot be healed, from the sole of thy foot unto the top of thy head. <sup>36</sup> The LORD shall bring thee, and thy king which thou shalt set over thee, unto a nation which neither thou nor thy fathers have known; and there shalt thou serve other gods, wood and stone. <sup>37</sup> And thou shalt become an astonishment, a proverb, and a byword, among all nations whither the LORD shall lead thee. <sup>38</sup> Thou shalt carry much seed out into the field, and shalt gather but little in; for the locust shall consume it. <sup>39</sup> Thou shalt plant vineyards, and dress them, but shalt neither drink of the wine, nor gather the grapes; for the worms shall eat them. <sup>40</sup> Thou shalt have olive trees throughout all thy coasts, but thou shalt not anoint thyself with the oil; for thine olive shall cast his fruit. <sup>41</sup> Thou shalt beget sons and daughters, but thou shalt not enjoy them; for they shall go into captivity. <sup>42</sup> All thy trees and fruit of thy land shall the locust consume. <sup>43</sup> The stranger that is within thee shall get up above thee very high; and thou shalt come down very low. <sup>44</sup> He shall lend to thee, and thou shalt not lend to him: he shall be the head, and thou shalt be the tail. <sup>45</sup> Moreover all these curses shall come upon thee, and shall pursue thee, and overtake thee, till thou be destroyed; because thou hearkenedst not unto the voice of the LORD thy God, to keep his commandments and his statutes which he commanded thee: <sup>46</sup> And they shall be upon thee for a sign and for a wonder, and upon thy seed for ever.

**Deuteronomy 28:47-53** – <sup>47</sup> Because thou servedst not the LORD thy God with joyfulness, and with gladness of heart, for the abundance of all things; <sup>48</sup> Therefore shalt thou serve thine enemies which the LORD shall send against thee, in hunger, and in thirst, and in nakedness, and in want of all things: and he shall put a yoke of iron upon thy neck, until he have destroyed thee. <sup>49</sup> The LORD shall bring a nation against thee from far, from the end of the earth, as swift as the eagle flieth; a nation whose tongue thou shalt not understand; <sup>50</sup> A nation of fierce countenance, which shall not regard the person of the old, nor shew favour to the young: <sup>51</sup> And he shall eat the fruit of thy cattle, and the fruit of thy land, until thou be destroyed: which also shall not leave thee either corn, wine, or oil, or the increase of thy kine, or flocks of thy sheep, until he have destroyed thee. <sup>52</sup> And he shall besiege thee in all thy gates, until thy high and fenced walls come down, wherein thou trustedst, throughout all thy land: and he shall besiege thee in all thy gates throughout all thy land, which the LORD thy God hath given thee. <sup>53</sup> And thou shalt eat the fruit of thine own body, the flesh of thy sons and of thy daughters, which the LORD thy God hath given thee, in the siege, and in the straitness, wherewith thine enemies shall distress thee:

**Deuteronomy 28:58-62** – <sup>58</sup> If thou wilt not observe to do all the words of this law that are written in this book, that thou mayest fear this glorious and fearful name, THE LORD THY GOD; <sup>59</sup> Then the

LORD will make thy plagues wonderful, and the plagues of thy seed, even great plagues, and of long continuance, and sore sicknesses, and of long continuance. <sup>60</sup> Moreover he will bring upon thee all the diseases of Egypt, which thou wast afraid of; and they shall cleave unto thee. <sup>61</sup> Also every sickness, and every plague, which is not written in the book of this law, them will the LORD bring upon thee, until thou be destroyed. <sup>62</sup> And ye shall be left few in number, whereas ye were as the stars of heaven for multitude; because thou wouldest not obey the voice of the LORD thy God.

**Deuteronomy 4:23-28** – <sup>23</sup> Take heed unto yourselves, lest ye forget the covenant of the LORD your God, which he made with you, and make you a graven image, or the likeness of any thing, which the LORD thy God hath forbidden thee. <sup>24</sup> For the LORD thy God is a consuming fire, even a jealous God. <sup>25</sup> When thou shalt beget children, and children's children, and ye shall have remained long in the land, and shall corrupt yourselves, and make a graven image, or the likeness of any thing, and shall do evil in the sight of the LORD thy God, to provoke him to anger: <sup>26</sup> I call heaven and earth to witness against you this day, that ye shall soon utterly perish from off the land whereunto ye go over Jordan to possess it; ye shall not prolong your days upon it, but shall utterly be destroyed. <sup>27</sup> And the LORD shall scatter you among the nations, and ye shall be left few in number among the heathen, whither the LORD shall lead you. <sup>28</sup> And there ye shall serve gods, the work of men's hands, wood and stone, which neither see, nor hear, nor eat, nor smell.

**See also** – Leviticus 20, Deuteronomy 7-9 and 18:10-13.

## God's Mercy On Those Who Repent

**Deuteronomy 4:29-31** – <sup>29</sup> But if from thence thou shalt seek the LORD thy God, thou shalt find him, if thou seek him with all thy heart and with all thy soul. <sup>30</sup> When thou art in tribulation, and all these things are come upon thee, even in the latter days, if thou turn to the LORD thy God, and shalt be obedient unto his voice; <sup>31</sup> (For the LORD thy God is a merciful God;) he will not forsake thee, neither destroy thee, nor forget the covenant of thy fathers which he sware unto them.

## Israel Judged For Her Wickedness

**Judges 2:10-15** – <sup>10</sup> And also all that generation were gathered unto their fathers: and there arose another generation after them, which knew not the LORD, nor yet the works which he had done for Israel. <sup>11</sup> And the children of Israel did evil in the sight of the LORD, and served Baalim: <sup>12</sup> And they forsook the LORD God of their fathers, which brought them out of the land of Egypt, and followed other gods, of the gods of the people that were round about them, and bowed themselves unto them, and provoked the LORD to anger. <sup>13</sup> And they forsook the LORD, and served Baal and Ashtaroth. <sup>14</sup> And the anger of the LORD was hot against Israel, and he delivered them into the hands of spoilers that spoiled them, and he sold them into the hands of their enemies round about, so that they could not any longer stand before their enemies. <sup>15</sup> Whithersoever they went out, the hand of the LORD was against them for evil, as the LORD had said, and as the LORD had sworn unto them: and they were greatly distressed.

**2 Kings 13:1-3** – <sup>1</sup> In the three and twentieth year of Joash the son of Ahaziah king of Judah

Jehoahaz the son of Jehu began to reign over Israel in Samaria, and reigned seventeen years. <sup>2</sup> And he did that which was evil in the sight of the LORD, and followed<sup>b</sup> the sins of Jeroboam the son of Nebat, which made Israel to sin; he departed not therefrom. <sup>3</sup> And the anger of the LORD was kindled against Israel, and he delivered them into the hand of Hazael king of Syria, and into the hand of Benhadad the son of Hazael, all their days.

**2 Chronicles 28:1-9** – <sup>1</sup> Ahaz was twenty years old when he began to reign, and he reigned sixteen years in Jerusalem: but he did not that which was right in the sight of the LORD, like David his father: <sup>2</sup> For he walked in the ways of the kings of Israel, and made also molten images for Baalim. <sup>3</sup> Moreover he burnt incense in the valley of the son of Hinnom, and burnt his children in the fire, after the abominations of the heathen whom the LORD had cast out before the children of Israel. <sup>4</sup> He sacrificed also and burnt incense in the high places, and on the hills, and under every green tree. <sup>5</sup> Wherefore the LORD his God delivered him into the hand of the king of Syria; and they smote him, and carried away a great multitude of them captives, and brought them to Damascus. And he was also delivered into the hand of the king of Israel, who smote him with a great slaughter. <sup>6</sup> For Pekah the son of Remaliah slew in Judah an hundred and twenty thousand in one day, which were all valiant<sup>c</sup> men; because they had forsaken the LORD God of their fathers. <sup>7</sup> And Zichri, a mighty man of Ephraim, slew Maaseiah the king's son, and Azrikam the governor of the house, and Elkanah that was next to the king. <sup>8</sup> And the children of Israel carried away captive of their brethren two hundred thousand, women, sons, and daughters, and took also away much spoil from them, and brought the spoil to Samaria. <sup>9</sup> But a prophet of the LORD was there, whose name was Oded: and he went out before the host that came to Samaria, and said unto them, Behold, because the LORD God of your fathers was wroth with Judah, he hath delivered them into your hand, and ye have slain them in a rage that reacheth up unto heaven.

**Psalms 106:34-46** – <sup>34</sup> They did not destroy the nations, concerning whom the LORD commanded them: <sup>35</sup> But were mingled among the heathen, and learned their works. <sup>36</sup> And they served their idols: which were a snare unto them. <sup>37</sup> Yea, they sacrificed their sons and their daughters unto devils, <sup>38</sup> And shed innocent blood, even the blood of their sons and of their daughters, whom they sacrificed unto the idols of Canaan: and the land was polluted with blood. <sup>39</sup> Thus were they defiled with their own works, and went a whoring with their own inventions. <sup>40</sup> Therefore was the wrath of the LORD kindled against his people, insomuch that he abhorred his own inheritance. <sup>41</sup> And he gave them into <sup>42</sup> the hand of the heathen; and they that hated them ruled over them. Their enemies also oppressed them, and they were brought into subjection under their hand. <sup>43</sup> Many times did he deliver them; but they provoked him with their counsel, and were brought low for their iniquity. <sup>44</sup> Nevertheless he regarded their affliction, when he heard their cry: <sup>45</sup> And he remembered for them his covenant, and repented according to the multitude of his mercies. <sup>46</sup> He made them also to be pitied of all those that carried them captives.

**2 Chronicles 33:1-10** – <sup>1</sup> Manasseh was twelve years old when he began to reign, and he reigned fifty and five years in Jerusalem: <sup>2</sup> But did that which was evil in the sight of the LORD, like unto the abominations of the heathen, whom the LORD had cast out before the children of Israel. <sup>3</sup> For he built again the high places which Hezekiah his father had broken down, and he reared up altars for Baalim, and made groves, and worshipped all the host of heaven, and served them. <sup>4</sup> Also he built altars in the



house of the LORD, whereof the LORD had said, In Jerusalem shall my name be for ever. <sup>5</sup> And he built altars for all the host of heaven in the two courts of the house of the LORD. <sup>6</sup> And he caused his children to pass through the fire in the valley of the son of Hinnom: also he observed times, and used enchantments, and used witchcraft, and dealt with a familiar spirit, and with wizards: he wrought much evil in the sight of the LORD, to provoke him to anger. <sup>7</sup> And he set a carved image, the idol which he had made, in the house of God, of which God had said to David and to Solomon his son, In this house, and in Jerusalem, which I have chosen before all the tribes of Israel, will I put my name for ever: <sup>8</sup> Neither will I any more remove the foot of Israel from out of the land which I have appointed for your fathers; so that they will take heed to do all that I have commanded them, according to the whole law and the statutes and the ordinances by the hand of Moses. <sup>9</sup> So **Manasseh made Judah and the inhabitants of Jerusalem to err, and to do worse than the heathen, whom the LORD had destroyed before the children of Israel.** <sup>10</sup> And the LORD spake to Manasseh, and to his people: but they would not hearken.

**See also** – Judges 3:1-9 & 10:7; 2 Kings 17:1-23, 24:1-20; Psalms 106:34-46; Jeremiah 39:1-9; Ezekiel 16:1-43; Luke 21:20-24; and 1 Thessalonians 2:14-16.

## Israel's Sins

**Psalm 106:34-39** – <sup>34</sup> They did not destroy the nations, concerning whom the LORD commanded them: <sup>35</sup> But were mingled among the heathen, and learned their works. <sup>36</sup> And they served their idols: which were a snare unto them. <sup>37</sup> Yea, they sacrificed their sons and their daughters unto devils, <sup>38</sup> And shed innocent blood, even the blood of their sons and of their daughters, whom they sacrificed unto the idols of Canaan: and the land was polluted with blood. <sup>39</sup> Thus were they defiled with their own works, and went a whoring with their own inventions.

**2 Chronicles 33:1-10** – <sup>1</sup> Manasseh was twelve years old when he began to reign, and he reigned fifty and five years in Jerusalem: <sup>2</sup> But did that which was evil in the sight of the LORD, like unto the abominations of the heathen, whom the LORD had cast out before the children of Israel. <sup>3</sup> For he built again the high places which Hezekiah his father had broken down, and he reared up altars for Baalim, and made groves, and worshipped all the host of heaven, and served them. <sup>4</sup> Also he built altars in the house of the LORD, whereof the LORD had said, In Jerusalem shall my name be for ever. <sup>5</sup> And he built altars for all the host of heaven in the two courts of the house of the LORD. <sup>6</sup> And he caused his children to pass through the fire in the valley of the son of Hinnom: also he observed times, and used enchantments, and used witchcraft, and dealt with a familiar spirit, and with wizards: he wrought much evil in the sight of the LORD, to provoke him to anger. <sup>7</sup> And he set a carved image, the idol which he had made, in the house of God, of which God had said to David and to Solomon his son, In this house, and in Jerusalem, which I have chosen before all the tribes of Israel, will I put my name for ever: <sup>8</sup> Neither will I any more remove the foot of Israel from out of the land which I have appointed for your fathers; so that they will take heed to do all that I have commanded them, according to the whole law and the statutes and the ordinances by the hand of Moses. <sup>9</sup> So Manasseh made Judah and the inhabitants of Jerusalem to err, and to do worse than the heathen, whom the LORD had destroyed before the children of Israel. <sup>10</sup> And the LORD spake to Manasseh, and to his people: but they would

not hearken.

## **God's Mercy On Sinners Does NOT Bring Righteousness**

**Judges 2:16-23** – <sup>16</sup> Nevertheless the LORD raised up judges, which delivered them out of the hand of those that spoiled them. <sup>17</sup> And yet they would not hearken unto their judges, but they went a whoring after other gods, and bowed themselves unto them: they turned quickly out of the way which their fathers walked in, obeying the commandments of the LORD; but they did not so. <sup>18</sup> And when the LORD raised them up judges, then the LORD was with the judge, and delivered them out of the hand of their enemies all the days of the judge: for it repented the LORD because of their groanings by reason of them that oppressed them and vexed them. <sup>19</sup> And it came to pass, when the judge was dead, that they returned, and corrupted themselves more than their fathers, in following other gods to serve them, and to bow down unto them; they ceased not from their own doings, nor from their stubborn way. <sup>20</sup> And the anger of the LORD was hot against Israel; and he said, Because that this people hath transgressed my covenant which I commanded their fathers, and have not hearkened unto my voice; <sup>21</sup> I also will not henceforth drive out any from before them of the nations which Joshua left when he died: <sup>22</sup> That through them I may prove Israel, whether they will keep the way of the LORD to walk therein, as their fathers did keep it, or not. <sup>23</sup> Therefore the LORD left those nations, without driving them out hastily; neither delivered he them into the hand of Joshua.

## **The Northern Ten Tribes Carried Into Captivity**

**2 Kings 17:1-23** – <sup>1</sup> In the twelfth year of Ahaz king of Judah began Hoshea the son of Elah to reign in Samaria over Israel nine years. <sup>2</sup> And he did that which was evil in the sight of the LORD, but not as the kings of Israel that were before him. <sup>3</sup> Against him came up Shalmaneser king of Assyria; and Hoshea became his servant, and gave him presents. <sup>4</sup> And the king of Assyria found conspiracy in Hoshea: for he had sent messengers to So king of Egypt, and brought no present to the king of Assyria, as he had done year by year: therefore the king of Assyria shut him up, and bound him in prison. <sup>5</sup> Then the king of Assyria came up throughout all the land, and went up to Samaria, and besieged it three years. <sup>6</sup> In the ninth year of Hoshea the king of Assyria took Samaria, and carried Israel away into Assyria, and placed them in Halah and in Habor by the river of Gozan, and in the cities of the Medes.

<sup>7</sup> For so it was, that the children of Israel had sinned against the LORD their God, which had brought them up out of the land of Egypt, from under the hand of Pharaoh king of Egypt, and had feared other gods, <sup>8</sup> And walked in the statutes of the heathen, whom the LORD cast out from before the children of Israel, and of the kings of Israel, which they had made. <sup>9</sup> And the children of Israel did secretly those things that were not right against the LORD their God, and they built them high places in all their cities, from the tower of the watchmen to the fenced city. <sup>10</sup> And they set them up images and groves in every high hill, and under every green tree: <sup>11</sup> And there they burnt incense in all the high places, as did the heathen whom the LORD carried away before them; and wrought wicked things to provoke the LORD to anger: <sup>12</sup> For they served idols, whereof the LORD had said unto them, Ye shall not do this thing. <sup>13</sup> Yet the LORD testified against Israel, and against Judah, by all the prophets, and by all the seers, saying, Turn ye from your evil ways, and keep my commandments and my statutes,

according to all the law which I commanded your fathers, and which I sent to you by my servants the prophets. <sup>14</sup> Notwithstanding they would not hear, but hardened their necks, like to the neck of their fathers, that did not believe in the LORD their God. <sup>15</sup> And they rejected his statutes, and his covenant that he made with their fathers, and his testimonies which he testified against them; and they followed vanity, and became vain, and went after the heathen that were round about them, concerning whom the LORD had charged them, that they should not do like them. <sup>16</sup> And they left all the commandments of the LORD their God, and made them molten images, even two calves, and made a grove, and worshipped all the host of heaven, and served Baal. <sup>17</sup> And they caused their sons and their daughters to pass through the fire, and used divination and enchantments, and sold themselves to do evil in the sight of the LORD, to provoke him to anger. <sup>18</sup> Therefore the LORD was very angry with Israel, and removed them out of his sight: there was none left but the tribe of Judah only. <sup>19</sup> Also Judah kept not the commandments of the LORD their God, but walked in the statutes of Israel which they made. <sup>20</sup> And the LORD rejected all the seed of Israel, and afflicted them, and delivered them into the hand of spoilers, until he had cast them out of his sight. <sup>21</sup> For he rent Israel from the house of David; and they made Jeroboam the son of Nebat king: and Jeroboam drave Israel from following the LORD, and made them sin a great sin. <sup>22</sup> For the children of Israel walked in all the sins of Jeroboam which he did; they departed not from them; <sup>23</sup> Until the LORD removed Israel out of his sight, as he had said by all his servants the prophets. So was Israel carried away out of their own land to Assyria unto this day.

## **Judah and Benjamin Carried Away Captive to Babylon**

**2 Kings 24** – <sup>1</sup> In his days Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon came up, and Jehoiakim became his servant three years: then he turned and rebelled against him. <sup>2</sup> And the LORD sent against him bands of the Chaldees, and bands of the Syrians, and bands of the Moabites, and bands of the children of Ammon, and sent them against Judah to destroy it, according to the word of the LORD, which he spake by his servants the prophets. <sup>3</sup> Surely at the commandment of the LORD came this upon Judah, to remove them out of his sight, for the sins of Manasseh, according to all that he did; <sup>4</sup> And also for the innocent blood that he shed: for he filled Jerusalem with innocent blood; which the LORD would not pardon. <sup>5</sup> Now the rest of the acts of Jehoiakim, and all that he did, are they not written in the book of the chronicles of the kings of Judah? <sup>6</sup> So Jehoiakim slept with his fathers: and Jehoiachin his son reigned in his stead. <sup>7</sup> And the king of Egypt came not again any more out of his land: for the king of Babylon had taken from the river of Egypt unto the river Euphrates all that pertained to the king of Egypt.

<sup>8</sup> Jehoiachin was eighteen years old when he began to reign, and he reigned in Jerusalem three months. And his mother's name was Nehushta, the daughter of Elnathan of Jerusalem. <sup>9</sup> And he did that which was evil in the sight of the LORD, according to all that his father had done. <sup>10</sup> At that time the servants of Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon came up against Jerusalem, and the city was besieged. <sup>11</sup> And Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon came against the city, and his servants did besiege it. <sup>12</sup> And Jehoiachin the king of Judah went out to the king of Babylon, he, and his mother, and his servants, and his princes, and his officers: and the king of Babylon took him in the eighth year of his reign. <sup>13</sup> And he carried out thence all the treasures of the house of the LORD, and the treasures of the king's house, and cut in pieces all the vessels of gold which Solomon king of Israel had made in the temple of the LORD, as the LORD had said. <sup>14</sup> And he carried away all Jerusalem, and all the princes, and all the

mighty men of valour, even ten thousand captives, and all the craftsmen and smiths: none remained, save the poorest sort of the people of the land. <sup>15</sup> And he carried away Jehoiachin to Babylon, and the king's mother, and the king's wives, and his officers, and the mighty of the land, those carried he into captivity from Jerusalem to Babylon. <sup>16</sup> And all the men of might, even seven thousand, and craftsmen and smiths a thousand, all that were strong and apt for war, even them the king of Babylon brought captive to Babylon. <sup>17</sup> And the king of Babylon made Mattaniah his father's brother king in his stead, and changed his name to Zedekiah. <sup>18</sup> Zedekiah was twenty and one years old when he began to reign, and he reigned eleven years in Jerusalem. And his mother's name was Hamutal, the daughter of Jeremiah of Libnah. <sup>19</sup> And he did that which was evil in the sight of the LORD, according to all that Jehoiakim had done. <sup>20</sup> For through the anger of the LORD it came to pass in Jerusalem and Judah, until he had cast them out from his presence, that Zedekiah rebelled against the king of Babylon.

## The Destruction of Jerusalem

**Luke 19:43-44** <sup>43</sup> For the days shall come upon thee, that thine enemies shall cast a trench about thee, and compass thee round, and keep thee in on every side, <sup>44</sup> And shall lay thee even with the ground, and thy children within thee; and they shall not leave in thee one stone upon another; because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.

**1 Thessalonians 2:14-16** – <sup>14</sup> For ye, brethren, became followers of the churches of God which in Judaea are in Christ Jesus: for ye also have suffered like things of your own countrymen, even as they have of the Jews: <sup>15</sup> Who both killed the Lord Jesus, and their own prophets, and have persecuted us; and they please not God, and are contrary to all men: <sup>16</sup> Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles that they might be saved, to fill up their sins alway: for the wrath is come upon them to the uttermost.

**Luke 21:20-24** - <sup>20</sup> And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh. <sup>21</sup> Then let them which are in Judaea flee to the mountains; and let them which are in the midst of it depart out; and let not them that are in the countries enter thereinto. <sup>22</sup> For these be the days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled. <sup>23</sup> But woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck, in those days! for there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath upon this people. <sup>24</sup> And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

## Summary

Israel was heir to the promises that God made to Abraham. God gave the land of Israel to Abraham as an everlasting inheritance; he said that his descendants would be as the sand of the sea; and that all nations would be blessed through him (Genesis 13:14-16, 18:18, and 22:15-18). Jesus was the fulfillment of God's promise to Abraham and Israel. Jesus was born of Mary who was of the seed of Abraham and through Jesus Christ all the nations of the world have been blessed.

Although all the world has been blessed through Jesus Christ, the majority of Abraham's descendants have rejected Jesus Christ and have received a curse rather than a blessing. After delivering Israel from captivity in Egypt, God promised Israel a special blessings if they kept his

commandments. He further promised to curse them and send judgment upon them if they turned away from him and refused to obey his commandments (Leviticus 26 and Deuteronomy 28). We can see Gods warning to Israel in the selected verses above (if you can - take the time to read all of Leviticus 26, Deuteronomy 28 and Deuteronomy 7-9):

God's patients and long-suffering came to an end with Israel as it did with the Canaanites, Sodom and Gomorrah and the world before the flood. God also had to bring Judah under the captivity of Babylon and later again they became subject to the authority of Rome because of their rebellion. Eventually God used Rome to destroy Jerusalem after a majority of the Jews rejected Jesus Christ as their savior.

The Apostle Paul tells us: "Now all these things happened unto them [Israel] for ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come." (1 Corinthians 10:11) Solomon tells us: "The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be; and that which is done is that which shall be done: and there is no new thing under the sun." (Ecclesiastes 1:9)

What happened to the nation of Israel is an example to us of what will happen to any people that repeat their mistakes. In fact, the mistakes of Israel shall be repeated and so shall their fate.

# #25

## God's Judgment

We often hear about the judgment of God and we think of it as a bad thing. God's judgment has a loving purpose. There are two types of judgment. There are judgments unto repentance which are designed to turn individuals and nations back to God and the saving grace of Jesus Christ. Then there is the final judgment of individuals and nations. These have a loving purpose as we shall see as well.

### God's Loving Judgment Unto Repentance

God brings judgment to lead us to repentance because he loves us. God isn't just loving; he literally is love (1 John 4:8 & 16). Love is his very being. He is pure and holy and desires only that, which is pure, holy, righteous and just. He longs to bless his righteous followers, to answer their prayers and grant them the desires of their heart. He is delighted in the righteous acts of his faithful followers, acts of truth, charity, mercy and justice. But he is also saddened by those who have rejected him and have rejected the saving grace of his Son, Jesus Christ. For this reason the Lord God of heaven delights in exercising loving judgment:

**2 Peter 3:9** – The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.

**Revelation 3:19-22** – <sup>19</sup>As many as I love, I **rebuke and chasten**: be zealous therefore, and repent. <sup>20</sup> Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me. <sup>21</sup> To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne. <sup>22</sup> He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

**Jeremiah 9:23-24** – Thus saith the LORD, Let not the wise man glory in his wisdom, neither let the mighty man glory in his might, let not the rich man glory in his riches: But let him that glorieth glory in this, that he understandeth and knoweth me, that **I am the LORD which exercise lovingkindness, judgment, and righteousness, in the earth**: for **in these things I delight**, saith the LORD.

**Isaiah 26:5, 9, 10, 11 & 17** – For he bringeth down them that dwell on high; the lofty city, he layeth it low; he layeth it low, even to the ground; he bringeth it even to the dust. ...**for when thy judgments are in the earth, the inhabitants of the world will learn righteousness**. Let favour be shewed to the wicked, yet will he not learn righteousness: in the land of uprightness will he deal unjustly, and will not behold the majesty of the LORD. **LORD, in trouble have they visited thee, they poured out a prayer when thy chastening was upon them**....Like as a woman with child, that draweth near the time of her delivery, is in pain, and crieth out in her pangs; so have we been in thy sight, O LORD.

**Ezekiel 18:30-32** – <sup>30</sup> Therefore I will judge you, O house of Israel, every one according to his ways, saith the Lord GOD. Repent, and turn yourselves from all your transgressions; so iniquity shall not be your ruin. <sup>31</sup> Cast away from you all your transgressions, whereby ye have transgressed; and make you a new heart and a new spirit: for why will ye die, O house of Israel? <sup>32</sup> For I have no

pleasure in the death of him that dieth, saith the Lord GOD: wherefore turn yourselves, and live ye.

## God's Final Judgment Unto Eternal Damnation

**2 Peter 3:7 & 9-15** – <sup>7</sup> But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men.... <sup>9</sup> The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance. <sup>10</sup> But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up. <sup>11</sup> Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy conversation and godliness, <sup>12</sup> Looking for and hasting unto the coming of the day of God, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat? <sup>13</sup> Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness. <sup>14</sup> Wherefore, beloved, seeing that ye look for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of him in peace, without spot, and blameless. <sup>15</sup> And account that the longsuffering of our Lord is salvation; even as our beloved brother Paul also according to the wisdom given unto him hath written unto you;

**Mathew 13:24-30 & 36-42** – <sup>24</sup> Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field: <sup>25</sup> But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way. <sup>26</sup> But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also. <sup>27</sup> So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares? <sup>28</sup> He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up? <sup>29</sup> But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them. <sup>30</sup> Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.

<sup>36</sup> ...his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field. <sup>37</sup> He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man; <sup>38</sup> The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but **the tares are the children of the wicked one**; <sup>39</sup> The enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels. <sup>40</sup> As therefore **the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world**. <sup>41</sup> The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity; <sup>42</sup> And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. <sup>43</sup> Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

**2 Thessalonians 1:6-10** – <sup>6</sup> Seeing it is a righteous thing with God to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you; <sup>7</sup> And to you who are troubled rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels, <sup>8</sup> In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ: <sup>9</sup> Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power; <sup>10</sup> When he shall come to be glorified in his saints, and to be admired in all them that believe (because our testimony among you was believed) in that day.

**Romans 2:5-10** – <sup>5</sup> But after thy hardness and impenitent heart treasurest up unto thyself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God; <sup>6</sup> Who will render to every man according to his deeds: <sup>7</sup> To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honour and immortality, eternal life: <sup>8</sup> But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation and wrath, <sup>9</sup> Tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that doeth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile; <sup>10</sup> But glory, honour, and peace, to every man that worketh good, to the Jew first, and also to the Gentile:

**Revelation 20:11-15** – <sup>11</sup> And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them. <sup>12</sup> And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. <sup>13</sup> And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. <sup>14</sup> And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. <sup>15</sup> **And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.**

## Who Will Receive God's Judgment of Damnation?

Anyone reading this must remember that if you have confessed your sins, repented and accepted Jesus as your Saviour, your sins have been blotted out. Your sins exist no more. Those who have not confessed their sins, repented and accepted Jesus Christ as their Saviour are accountable to God for their sins.

**1 Corinthians 6:9-10** – <sup>9</sup> Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, <sup>10</sup> Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.

**Galatians 5:19-26** – <sup>19</sup> Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, <sup>20</sup> Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, <sup>21</sup> Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God. <sup>22</sup> But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, <sup>23</sup> Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law. <sup>24</sup> And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts. <sup>25</sup> If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit. <sup>26</sup> Let us not be desirous of vain glory, provoking one another, envying one another.

**Romans 2:12-13** – <sup>12</sup> For as many as have sinned without law shall also perish without law: and as many as have sinned in the law shall be judged by the law; <sup>13</sup> (For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified.

**1 Corinthians 3:16-23** – <sup>16</sup> Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? <sup>17</sup> If any man defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which temple ye are. <sup>18</sup> Let no man deceive himself. If any man among you seemeth to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be wise. <sup>19</sup> For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God. For it is written, He taketh the wise in their own craftiness. <sup>20</sup> And again, The



Lord knoweth the thoughts of the wise, that they are vain. <sup>21</sup> Therefore let no man glory in men. For all things are yours; <sup>22</sup> Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come; all are yours; <sup>23</sup> And ye are Christ's; and Christ is God's.

**Matthew 7:21-24** – <sup>21</sup> Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. <sup>22</sup> Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? <sup>23</sup> And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity. <sup>24</sup> Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock:

**James 2:8-13** – <sup>8</sup> If ye fulfil the royal law according to the scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ye do well: <sup>9</sup> But if ye have respect to persons [treat one person as being more important than another], ye commit sin, and are convinced of the law as transgressors. <sup>10</sup> For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all. <sup>11</sup> For he that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law. <sup>12</sup> So speak ye, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty. <sup>13</sup> For he shall have judgment without mercy, that hath shewed no mercy; and mercy rejoiceth against judgment.

**John 12:48:50** – <sup>48</sup> He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day. <sup>49</sup> For I have not spoken of myself; but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak. <sup>50</sup> And I know that his commandment is life everlasting: whatsoever I speak therefore, even as the Father said unto me, so I speak.

**Luke 12:16-21** – <sup>16</sup> And he spake a parable unto them, saying, The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully: <sup>17</sup> And he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits? <sup>18</sup> And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there will I bestow all my fruits and my goods. <sup>19</sup> And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years; take thine ease, eat, drink, and be merry. <sup>20</sup> But God said unto him, Thou fool, this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be, which thou hast provided? <sup>21</sup> So is he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God.

**Romans 2:1-13** – <sup>1</sup> Therefore thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoever thou art that judgest: for wherein thou judgest another, thou condemnest thyself; for thou that judgest doest the same things. <sup>2</sup> But we are sure that the judgment of God is according to truth against them which commit such things. <sup>3</sup> And thinkest thou this, O man, that judgest them which do such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the judgment of God? <sup>4</sup> Or despisest thou the riches of his goodness and forbearance and longsuffering; not knowing that the goodness of God leadeth thee to repentance? <sup>5</sup> But after thy hardness and impenitent heart treasurest up unto thyself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God; <sup>6</sup> Who will render to every man according to his deeds: <sup>7</sup> To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honour and immortality, eternal life: <sup>8</sup> But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation and wrath, <sup>9</sup> Tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that doeth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile; <sup>10</sup> But glory, honour, and peace, to every man that worketh good, to the Jew first, and also to the Gentile: <sup>11</sup> For there is no respect of persons with God. <sup>12</sup> For as many as have sinned without

law shall also perish without law: and as many as have sinned in the law shall be judged by the law; <sup>13</sup>  
(For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified.

## Summary

God is patient and longsuffering as an evil and corrupt world rejects his love and the sacrifice of his own Son Jesus Christ. While the world continues to reject God and his love and the saving grace of Jesus Christ, God continues to pour out his love. The love of God is poured out on a rebellious, defiant and evil world. But while God's love will never end his longsuffering and patience will come to an end. God loves us so very much that he will use every device possible to show us the consequence of the choices we have made to reject him and the saving grace of Jesus Christ. When love and patience have run their course, God turns to judgment. This is not a vengeful judgment but a judgment to repentance.

Eventually time runs out for each of us. For most of us, that happens when we die, for some it will happen when Jesus returns. When our time is up, if we don't have the righteousness of Christ, we will eventually receive God's judgment for our sins. We receive the righteousness of Christ by confessing our sins, repenting and by accepting Jesus Christ as our Saviour. When we repent, we turn away from sin.

The judgment of the sinner is for good cause, it will put an end to sin. Most people blame God for their pain and suffering but it is the result of sin. Most pain and suffering is caused by the sinful actions of others. Much pain and suffering is the result of degeneration of our bodies. This is a result of sin. Some pain and suffering are the result of accidents that occur in a sinful imperfect world.

God can't put an end to pain and suffering until He puts an end to sin. Most of the world loves sin and hates God's law. God can't put an end to sin until he puts an end to rebellious sinners. Heaven can't be a place of endless happiness if people are lying, cheating, molesting, stealing, and killing.

When God judges the sinner it will be an act of love. God will put an end to all pain and suffering in the universe. In order to end pain and suffering, God must put an end to sin. To put an end to sin, God must bring sinners to an end.

## #26

# What Happens After You Die?

People from different cultures and religions around the world have a great many different beliefs about what happens after you die. This study is not concerned about what people believe but what the world of God says. Even most Christian churches have teachings that conflict with what the word of God teaches. I almost guarantee that no matter what your background, you will find something in this study that challenges what you believe.

The teachings of most Christian churches are based on the teachings of the Greek Philosopher Plato rather than the Bible. Many support their beliefs with dreams and what are called near death experiences. The truth is, only God knows what happens after death. God has provided this truth in his word. If we study and believe God's word, we will not be deceived. God instructs us to "walk by faith, not by sight" (2 Corinthians 5:7). "Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen." (Hebrews 11:1)

As you shall see below, the Bible clearly tells us that only God has immortality. As we have previously studied, all sinners shall die. We know by experience that everyone eventually dies. Satan lied to Eve in the Garden of Eden. He told her she could eat the fruit and "Ye shall not surely die." What Satan told Eve was that she could sin and not die; he was a liar. Today, most of the world and most Christians believe the lie Satan told Eve. They believe that at death the spirit lives on which is to say we don't really die. Many believe these spirits can come and speak to us. Below we'll discover the truth of what God says about death.

## Where Should We Seek Truth Concerning Death?

**Isaiah 8:19-20** – <sup>19</sup> And when they shall say unto you, Seek unto them that have familiar spirits, and unto wizards that peep, and that mutter: should not a people seek unto their God? for the living to the dead? <sup>20</sup> To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, it is because there is no light in them.

## God Warned Adam That Death Would Result From Sin

**Genesis 2:17** – But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.

## What Lie Did Satan Tell Eve?

**Genesis 3:4** – And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die:

## What Is The Wages of Sin?

**Romans 6:23** – For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

**Psalms 89:48** – What man is he that liveth, and shall not see death? shall he deliver his soul from the hand of the grave?

## God Took The Tree Of Life Away From Adam And Eve

**Genesis 3:22-24** – <sup>22</sup> And the LORD God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever: <sup>23</sup> Therefore the LORD God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. <sup>24</sup> So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life.

## Adam And Eve Died

**Genesis 5:5** – And all the days that Adam lived were nine hundred and thirty years: and he died.

## What Did God Say Would Happen To Adam After He Died?

**Genesis 3:17-19** – <sup>17</sup> And unto Adam he said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life; <sup>18</sup> Thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field; <sup>19</sup> In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, **till thou return unto the ground;** for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and **unto dust shalt thou return.**

## What Is A Soul

The word “soul” comes from the Hebrew word “nephesh”, which literally means “a breathing creature”. Note in the following text that man did not become a “living soul” until after God breathed the “breath of life” into him. A living soul needs the breath of life but the breath of life is not a soul.

**Genesis 2:7** – And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.

**Leviticus 7:25** – For whosoever eateth the fat of the beast, of which men offer an offering made by fire unto the LORD, even the soul (living person) that eateth it shall be cut off from his people. (Words in parenthesis added for clarification)

**Psalms 42:2** – My soul (whole living being) thirsteth for God, for the living God: when shall I come and appear before God? (Words in parenthesis added for clarification)

**Psalm 56:13** – For thou hast delivered my soul (whole living being) from death: wilt not thou deliver my feet from falling, that I may walk before God in the light of the living? (Words in parenthesis added for clarification)

**Revelation 16:3** – And the second angel poured out his vial upon the sea; and it became as the blood of a dead man: and every living soul (living creature) died in the sea. (Words in parenthesis added for clarification)

## **The Soul That Sins Shall Die**

**Ezekiel 18:4** – Behold, all souls are mine; as the soul of the father, so also the soul of the son is mine: the soul that sinneth, it shall die.

**Ezekiel 18:20** – The soul that sinneth, it shall die...

**Romans 6:23** – For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

**Psalm 37:20** – But **the wicked shall perish**, and the enemies of the LORD shall be as the fat of lambs: they shall consume; into smoke shall they consume away.

**Psalm 68:2** – As smoke is driven away, so drive them away: as wax melteth before the fire, so let **the wicked perish at the presence of God**.

## **All Have Sinned**

**Romans 3:23** – For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God;

## **The Spirit After Death**

**Ecclesiastics 12:7** – Then shall the dust return to the earth as it was: and the spirit shall return unto God who gave it.

## **The Spirit Is The Breath of Life**

**Job 27:3** – <sup>3</sup> All the while my breath is in me, and the spirit of God is in my nostrils;

**Genesis 2:7** – And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.

**Psalm 146:4** – His breath goeth forth, he returneth to his earth; in that very day his thoughts perish.

**Psalm 104:29** – Thou hidest thy face, they are troubled: thou takest away their breath, they die, and return to their dust.

## **Without The Breath of Life – We Are Dust**

**Psalm 104:29** – Thou hidest thy face, they are troubled: thou takest away their breath, they die, and return to their dust.

**Genesis 3:19** – In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return.

## **The Dead Are In The Grave**

**Ecclesiastics 9:10** – Whatsoever thy hand findeth to do, do it with thy might; for there is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in the grave, whither thou goest.

**Job 14:10-12** – <sup>10</sup> But man dieth, and wasteth away: yea, man giveth up the ghost, and where is he? <sup>11</sup> As the waters fail from the sea, and the flood decayeth and drieth up: <sup>12</sup> So man lieth down, and riseth not: till the heavens be no more, they shall not awake, nor be raised out of their sleep.

## **Only God Is Immortal**

**1 Timothy 1:17** – Now unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, be honour and glory for ever and ever. Amen.

**1 Timothy 6:15-16** – <sup>15</sup> Which in his times he shall shew, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords <sup>16</sup> **Who only hath immortality**, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom be honour and power everlasting. Amen.

## **Who Has Control Over Life And Death?**

**Revelation 1:17-18** – <sup>17</sup> And when I saw him [Jesus], I fell at his feet as dead. And he laid his right hand upon me, saying unto me, Fear not; I am the first and the last: <sup>18</sup> I am he that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, **I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death.**

## **Jesus Was Asked How Eternal Life Can Be Obtained**

**Luke 10:25** – And, behold, a certain lawyer stood up, and tempted him, saying, Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?

**Luke 18:18** – And a certain ruler asked him, saying, Good Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?

## The Gift of Immortality

**1 Corinthians 15:51-55** – <sup>51</sup> Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, <sup>52</sup> In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. <sup>53</sup> For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. <sup>54</sup> So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. <sup>55</sup> O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory?

## In Order To Gain Immortality – You Must Be Mortal

**1 Corinthians 15:52-53** – <sup>52</sup> In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and **the dead shall be raised** incorruptible, and we shall be changed. <sup>53</sup> For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality.

## Eternal Life Is Obtained Through Jesus Christ

**Matthew 25:46** – And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal.

**John 6:54** – Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day.

**John 17:3** – And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent.

**Romans 5:21** – That as sin hath reigned unto death, even so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life by Jesus Christ our Lord.

## God's Faithful Have Not Yet Received The Promise of Eternal Life

**John 3:13** – And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man which is in heaven.

**Hebrews 11:32-40** – <sup>32</sup> And what shall I more say? for the time would fail me to tell of Gedeon, and of Barak, and of Samson, and of Jephthae; of David also, and Samuel, and of the prophets: <sup>33</sup> Who through faith subdued kingdoms, wrought righteousness, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions, <sup>34</sup> Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens. <sup>35</sup> Women received their dead raised to life again: and others were tortured, not accepting deliverance; that they might obtain a better resurrection: <sup>36</sup> And others had trial of cruel mockings and scourgings, yea, moreover of bonds and imprisonment: <sup>37</sup> They were stoned, they were sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the sword: they wandered about in sheepskins and goatskins; being destitute, afflicted, tormented; <sup>38</sup> (Of whom

the world was not worthy:) they wandered in deserts, and in mountains, and in dens and caves of the earth. <sup>39</sup> And these **all, having obtained a good report through faith, received not the promise:** <sup>40</sup> God having provided some better thing for us, that **they without us should not be made perfect.**

**Acts 2:29 & 34** – <sup>29</sup> Men and brethren, let me freely speak unto you of the patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre is with us unto this day.... <sup>34</sup> For David is not ascended into the heavens: but he saith himself, The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,

## A New Body

**Philippians 3:20-21** – <sup>20</sup> For our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ: <sup>21</sup> Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things unto himself.

## Death Comes Before Eternal Life

**Ezekiel 18:20** – The soul that sinneth, it shall die...

**1 Corinthians 15:21-22** – <sup>21</sup> For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. <sup>22</sup> For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.

**Hebrews 9:27** – And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment:

## The Dead Cannot Return Home

**Job 7:9-10** – <sup>9</sup> As the cloud is consumed and vanisheth away: so he that goeth down to the grave shall come up no more. <sup>10</sup> He shall return no more to his house, neither shall his place know him any more.

## The Dead Do Not Praise God

**Psalm 115:17** – The dead praise not the LORD, neither any that go down into silence.

## The Dead Can Do Nothing And They Know Nothing!

**Psalm 146:4** – His breath goeth forth, he returneth to his earth; in that very day **his thoughts perish.**

**Psalm 6:4-5** – <sup>4</sup> Return, O LORD, deliver my soul: oh save me for thy mercies' sake. <sup>5</sup> For in death there is no remembrance of thee: in the grave who shall give thee thanks?

**Ecclesiastes 9:5-6** – <sup>5</sup> For the living know that they shall die: but **the dead know not any thing,** neither have they any more a reward; for the memory of them is forgotten. <sup>6</sup> Also **their love, and their**



**hatred, and their envy, is now perished;** neither have they any more a portion for ever in any thing that is done under the sun.

**Ecclesiastes 9:10** – Whatsoever thy hand findeth to do, do it with thy might; for **there is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in the grave, whither thou goest.**

**Mark 12:27** – He is not the God of the dead, but the God of the living: ye therefore do greatly err.

**Job 14:2** – He cometh forth like a flower, and is cut down: he fleeth also as a shadow, and **continueth not.**

**Job 14:10** – But man dieth, and wasteth away: yea, man giveth up the ghost, and where is he?

## **The Dead Shall Be Raised From The Grave**

**Luke 14:14** – <sup>14</sup> And thou shalt be blessed; for they cannot recompense thee: for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the just.

**John 5:28-29** – [Jesus said:] <sup>28</sup> Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, <sup>29</sup> And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.

## **When Are The Dead Raised?**

**1 Corinthians 15:22-23** – <sup>20</sup> But now is Christ risen from the dead, and become the firstfruits of them that slept. <sup>21</sup> For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. <sup>22</sup> For as in Adam all die, even so **in Christ shall all be made alive.** <sup>23</sup> But every man in his own order: Christ the firstfruits; **afterward they that are Christ's at his coming.** <sup>24</sup> Then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power. <sup>25</sup> For he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet. <sup>26</sup> **The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death.**

**1 Corinthians 15:51-57** – <sup>51</sup> Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, <sup>52</sup> In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, **at the last trump:** for the trumpet shall sound, and **the dead shall be raised** incorruptible, and we shall be changed. <sup>53</sup> For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. <sup>54</sup> So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. <sup>55</sup> O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? <sup>56</sup> The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. <sup>57</sup> But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.

**John 6:39,40, 44 & 54** – <sup>39</sup> And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should **raise it up again at the last day.** <sup>40</sup> And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and **I will raise him up at the last day.**

<sup>44</sup> No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and **I will raise him**

**up at the last day.** <sup>54</sup> Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternal life; and **I will raise him up at the last day.**

**John 11:23-24** – <sup>23</sup> Jesus saith unto her, Thy brother shall rise again. <sup>24</sup> Martha saith unto him, I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day.

**Matthew 13:39** – The enemy that sowed them is the devil; **the harvest is the end of the world;** and the reapers are the angels.

**1 Thessalonians 4:15-17** – <sup>15</sup> For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we which are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord shall not prevent them which are asleep. <sup>16</sup> For **the Lord himself shall descend from heaven** with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: **and the dead in Christ shall rise first:** <sup>17</sup> Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.

**Mark 13:24-27** – <sup>24</sup> But in those days, **after that tribulation,** the sun shall be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, <sup>25</sup> And the stars of heaven shall fall, and the powers that are in heaven shall be shaken. <sup>26</sup> And then shall **they see the Son of man coming in the clouds** with great power and glory. <sup>27</sup> And **then shall he send his angels, and shall gather together his elect from the four winds,** from the uttermost part of the earth to the uttermost part of heaven.

## What Is The Fate of The Wicked – The Unsaved?

### They Shall Be As If They Had Never Existed

**Psalm 37:10** – For yet a little while, and the wicked shall not be: yea, thou shalt diligently consider his place, and it shall not be.

**Psalm 9:5-6** – <sup>5</sup> Thou hast rebuked the heathen, thou hast destroyed the wicked, thou hast put out their name for ever and ever. <sup>6</sup> O thou enemy, destructions are come to a perpetual end: and thou hast destroyed cities; their memorial is perished with them.

**Obadiah 1:16** - For as ye have drunk upon my holy mountain, so shall all the heathen drink continually, yea, they shall drink, and they shall swallow down, and they shall be as though they had not been.

### Eternal Death

The wicked or unsaved suffer eternal death. The following texts say that they are consumed by fire, destroyed; they suffer everlasting destruction which is the second death. There is no resurrection from the second death; it is eternal.

**Matthew 13:37-42** – <sup>37</sup> He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man; <sup>38</sup> The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked one; <sup>39</sup> The enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels. <sup>40</sup> As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so

shall it be in the end of this world. <sup>41</sup> **The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity;** <sup>42</sup> **And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.**

**2 Thessalonians 2:8-11** – <sup>8</sup> **And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming:** <sup>9</sup> Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, <sup>10</sup> And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. <sup>11</sup> And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: <sup>12</sup> That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness.

**Revelation 20:5 & 12-15** – <sup>5</sup> But the rest of **the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished** And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison,... <sup>12</sup> And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. <sup>13</sup> And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. <sup>14</sup> And **death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death.** <sup>15</sup> **And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.**

**2 Thessalonians 1:8-9** – <sup>8</sup> In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ: <sup>9</sup> **Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction** from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power;

## Jesus And The Thief On The Cross

Jesus told one of his two companions on the cross that he would be with him in paradise. But when did Jesus say this would happen? We must look to the original Greek and the rest of scripture to find the answer. The original gospels were written in Greek and there was no punctuation. The Bible translators had to decide where the punctuation marks would go. They made an obvious error in Luke 23:43. You see, Jesus did not tell the thief when he would join him in paradise, he just told him he would be there. Look at the texts below.

**Luke 23:43** – <sup>39</sup> And one of the malefactors which were hanged railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ, save thyself and us. <sup>40</sup> But the other answering rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation? <sup>41</sup> And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss. <sup>42</sup> And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom. <sup>43</sup> And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise.

Now consider what happens when just one comma is moved: “And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee to day[,] shalt thou be with me in paradise.” This punctuation change brings the text into harmony with all the texts above. It further brings the verse into harmony with the other statements Jesus made about his death. Jesus said he would be in the grave 3-days and 3-nights. And on the morning of His resurrection, he told Mary that he had not yet been to see his Father which is to say he hadn't been to heaven. Therefore, if Jesus wasn't in heaven, the thief could not have joined him there on the day of his death.

**Mathew 12:40** – For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale’s belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.

**John 20:11-17** – <sup>11</sup> But Mary stood without at the sepulchre weeping: and as she wept, she stooped down, and looked into the sepulchre, <sup>12</sup> And seeth two angels in white sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of Jesus had lain. <sup>13</sup> And they say unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She saith unto them, Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him. <sup>14</sup> And when she had thus said, she turned herself back, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus. <sup>15</sup> Jesus saith unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou? She, supposing him to be the gardener, saith unto him, Sir, if thou have borne him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away. <sup>16</sup> Jesus saith unto her, Mary. She turned herself, and saith unto him, Rabboni; which is to say, Master. <sup>17</sup> Jesus saith unto her, **Touch me not; for I am not yet ascended to my Father:** but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father, and your Father; and to my God, and your God.

## Summary

God warned Adam that if he ate the forbidden fruit, he would die. Satan told Eve that God was a liar. He said if she ate the fruit she wouldn't die. Adam and Eve died. Satan has perpetuated the lie and most people today believe that we have an immortal spirit that lives on after death. Satan is a liar and the teaching of an immortal spirit is a lie.

Only God is immortal. God has control over life and death. Eternal life is a gift from God. If immortality is a gift, one must be mortal to begin with. The gift of eternal life can only be obtained through the saving grace of Jesus Christ. God tells us that King David, the prophet Samuel and His other faithful servants have not yet received their reward in heaven.

God tells us that the dead cannot return home; they do not praise him; they have no love; they have not hatred; they have no wisdom; they have no thoughts. God said that Adam and Eve would turn back into dust after they die. This is our fate as well.

The faithful shall receive their reward of eternal life at one big event when Jesus returns. Those who have died will be raised from the grave with new glorified bodies. The faithful who are alive when Jesus return will be changed physically.

The wicked shall not inherit eternal life. Eternal life is a gift reserved for God's faithful only. The wicked will be judged and their lives will be ended for eternity. It is an eternal judgment.

## #27

# Hell – What Is It?

Hell comes from the Hebrew word “*shâ’owl*”, which means grave, hell or pit. There are two Greek words translated as hell. For this reason, the Greek is not as clear as the Hebrew. These two Greek words are “*geenna*” and “*hades*”. “*Geenna*” can be translated as “hell fire” or a place of future punishment. This future punishment is “the lake of fire” described in Revelation 20. The *Enhanced Strong’s Lexicon* well states, that “the lake of fire” is “a fit symbol of the wicked and their future destruction.” The actual meaning of “*geenna*” is contrary to the popular mistaken belief that hell is a place of eternal torment of the wicked. The second Greek word for hell is “*Hades*.” It can be translated “hell” or “grave”. Despite two different words being translated as hell in the Greek, you’ll see God is quite clear about what hell is.

## Jesus Holds The Keys of Hell

**Revelation 1:17-18** – <sup>17</sup> ...Fear not; I am the first and the last: <sup>18</sup> I am he that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death.

## The Wicked Shall Be Cast Into Hell

**Psalm 9:17** – The wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the nations that forget God.

**Proverbs 15:24** – The way of life is above to the wise, that he may depart from hell beneath.

**Matthew 10:28** – And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul [breath of life] and body in hell.

**Mathew 23:15 & 33** – <sup>15</sup> Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the child of hell than yourselves.... <sup>33</sup> Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell?

## Lucifer Will Be Cast Into The Pit of Hell

**Isaiah 14:12-15** – <sup>12</sup> How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! <sup>13</sup> For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: <sup>14</sup> I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. <sup>15</sup> Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit.

## Hell – An Unquenchable Fire

**Mark 9:43-48** – <sup>43</sup> And if thy hand offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into life

maimed, than having two hands to **go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched**: <sup>44</sup> Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. <sup>45</sup> And if thy foot offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter halt into life, than having two feet to be cast into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched: <sup>46</sup> Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. <sup>47</sup> And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out: it is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire: <sup>48</sup> Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

## Fires That Could Not Be Quenched

An unquenchable fire can not be put out but that does not mean that it will burn forever.

**Jeremiah 17:27** – But if ye will not hearken unto me to hallow the sabbath day, and not to bear a burden, even entering in at the gates of Jerusalem on the sabbath day; then will **I kindle a fire in the gates thereof, and it shall devour the palaces of Jerusalem, and it shall not be quenched.**

**2 Chronicles 36:19-21** – And **they burnt the house of God**, and brake down the wall of Jerusalem, **and burnt all the palaces thereof with fire**, and destroyed all the goodly vessels thereof. <sup>20</sup> And them that had escaped from the sword carried he away to Babylon; where they were servants to him and his sons until the reign of the kingdom of Persia: <sup>21</sup> To fulfil the word of the LORD by the mouth of Jeremiah, until the land had enjoyed her sabbaths: for as long as she lay desolate she kept sabbath, to fulfil threescore and ten years.

**Jeremiah 4:4** – Circumcise yourselves to the LORD, and take away the foreskins of your heart, ye men of Judah and inhabitants of Jerusalem: **lest my fury come forth like fire, and burn that none can quench it**, because of the evil of your doings.

**Ezekiel 20:47-48** – <sup>47</sup> And say to the forest of the south, Hear the word of the LORD; Thus saith the Lord GOD; Behold, **I will kindle a fire in thee**, and it shall devour every green tree in thee, and every dry tree: **the flaming flame shall not be quenched**, and all faces from the south to the north shall be burned therein. <sup>48</sup> And all flesh shall see that I the LORD have kindled it: it shall not be quenched.

**Jeremiah 21:12-14** – <sup>12</sup> O house of David, thus saith the LORD; Execute judgment in the morning, and deliver him that is spoiled out of the hand of the oppressor, **lest my fury go out like fire, and burn that none can quench it, because of the evil of your doings.** <sup>13</sup> Behold, I am against thee, O inhabitant of the valley, and rock of the plain, saith the LORD; which say, Who shall come down against us? or who shall enter into our habitations? <sup>14</sup> But I will punish you according to the fruit of your doings, saith the LORD: and I will kindle a fire in the forest thereof, and it shall devour all things round about it.

## The Carcasses of The Sinner

A carcass is a dead body. A dead body has ceased to live. It does not think, it has no feeling and is not in torment. The punishment of the sinner is the everlasting loss of life.

**Isaiah 66:22-24** – <sup>22</sup> For as the new heavens and the new earth, which I will make, shall remain before me, saith the LORD, so shall your seed and your name remain. <sup>23</sup> And it shall come to pass, that

from one new moon to another, and from one sabbath to another, shall all flesh come to worship before me, saith the LORD. <sup>24</sup> And they shall go forth, and **look upon the carcasses of the men that have transgressed against me**: for their worm shall not die, **neither shall their fire be quenched**; and they shall be an abhorring unto all flesh.

**Ecclesiastics 9:5-6** – <sup>5</sup> For the living know that they shall die: but the dead know not any thing, neither have they any more a reward; for the memory of them is forgotten. <sup>6</sup> Also their love, and their hatred, and their envy, is now perished; neither have they any more a portion for ever in any thing that is done under the sun.

**Psalms 115:17** – The dead praise not the LORD, neither any that go down into silence.

## Hell – An Everlasting Fire

**Matthew 25:40-41** – <sup>40</sup> And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me. <sup>41</sup> Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into **everlasting fire**, prepared for the devil and his angels:

## Hell - Everlasting Destruction

**Matthew 25:46** – And these shall go away into **everlasting punishment**: but the righteous into life eternal.

**2 Thessalonians 1:8-9** – <sup>8</sup> In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ: <sup>9</sup> **Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction** from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power;

## The Wicked Melt As Wax – They Become Smoke And Ash

The punishment of hell is everlasting but the suffering is momentary. The Bible reveals that the wicked (unsaved) are consumed away as chaff into smoke; they melt as wax; they become ashes and they are no more.

**Psalms 37:20** – But **the wicked shall perish**, and the enemies of the LORD shall be as the fat of lambs: **they shall consume; into smoke shall they consume away**.

**Psalms 68:2** – As smoke is driven away, so drive them away: **as wax melteth before the fire**, so let **the wicked perish at the presence of God**.

**Psalms 104:35** – **Let the sinners be consumed out of the earth**, and **let the wicked be no more**. Bless thou the LORD, O my soul. Praise ye the LORD.

**Malachi 4:1-3** – <sup>1</sup> For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble: and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the LORD of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch. <sup>2</sup> But unto you that fear my name shall the Sun

of righteousness arise with healing in his wings; and ye shall go forth, and grow up as calves of the stall. <sup>3</sup> And **ye shall tread down the wicked; for they shall be ashes** under the soles of your feet in the day that I shall do this, saith the LORD of hosts.

## **Satan Himself Turned Into Ash – Never To Exist Again!**

**Ezekiel 28:14-19** – <sup>14</sup> Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth; and I have set thee so: thou wast upon the holy mountain of God; thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire. <sup>15</sup> Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created, till iniquity was found in thee. <sup>16</sup> By the multitude of thy merchandise they have filled the midst of thee with violence, and thou hast sinned: therefore I will cast thee as profane out of the mountain of God: and I will destroy thee, O covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire. <sup>7</sup> Thine heart was lifted up because of thy beauty, thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness: I will cast thee to the ground, I will lay thee before kings, that they may behold thee. <sup>8</sup> Thou hast defiled thy sanctuaries by the multitude of thine iniquities, by the iniquity of thy traffick; therefore will **I bring forth a fire from the midst of thee, it shall devour thee, and I will bring thee to ashes** upon the earth in the sight of all them that behold thee. <sup>9</sup> All they that know thee among the people shall be astonished at thee: thou shalt be a terror, and **never shalt thou be any more.**

## **Sodom And Gomorrah Were Burned With Eternal Fire**

**Jude 7** – Even as **Sodom and Gomorrah**, and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, **suffering the vengeance of eternal fire.**

## **Sodom And Gomorrah Are Now Ashes**

**2 Peter 2:4-6** – <sup>4</sup> For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment; <sup>5</sup> And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly; <sup>6</sup> And **turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes** condemned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly;

**Luke 17:29-30** – <sup>29</sup> But the same day that Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and **destroyed them all.** <sup>30</sup> Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed.

## **The Beast And False Prophet Thrown In The Lake of Fire**

**Revelation 19:11-13 & 19-21** – <sup>11</sup> And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war. <sup>12</sup>



His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written, that no man knew, but he himself. <sup>13</sup> And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and his name is called The Word of God.... <sup>19</sup> And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his army. <sup>20</sup> **And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet** that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both **were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.** <sup>21</sup> And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth: and all the fowls were filled with their flesh.

## The Wicked Are Dead And Live Not

**Revelation 20:4-6** – <sup>4</sup> And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years. <sup>5</sup> **But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished.** This is the first resurrection. <sup>6</sup> Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.

## The Wicked Cast Into The Lake of Fire

**Revelation 20:5 & 12-15** – <sup>5</sup> But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison... <sup>12</sup> And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. <sup>13</sup> And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. <sup>14</sup> And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. **This is the second death.** <sup>15</sup> And **whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.**

## The Wicked Devoured By Fire

**Revelation 20:7-10** – <sup>7</sup> And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, <sup>8</sup> And shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea. <sup>9</sup> And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city: and **fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them.** <sup>10</sup> And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.

## Death And Hell Cast Into The Lake of Fire

**Revelation 20:14-15** – <sup>14</sup> **And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire.** This is the second death. <sup>15</sup> And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.

### Summary

The wicked shall remain in the grave (hades) until they are resurrected for the judgment at the end of the millennium. After the judgment they shall be totally consumed in the lake of fire (“geenna”) and shall cease to exist. The punishment of the wicked is death (Revelation 20:14); they shall be consumed away into smoke; they shall melt as wax; and “they shall be ashes”. This happens when they are thrown into the lake of fire. In the lake of fire they are burned up and they experience the second death. God is a loving God; he does not eternally torment the wicked. But because God is loving, he cannot let sin continue, he must put an end to it. When the wicked are put to death in the lake of fire, sin dies with them. At the same time, the grave (hell) is consumed in the fire as well. There will be no need for the grave any longer because the righteous shall inherit eternal life.

## #28

# The Leaven Of False Doctrine

During the Passover Feast the Israelites were to eat no leavened bread or to even have any leaven in their homes. The punishment of neglecting this command was to be cut off from Israel. Moses writes: "Seven days shall ye eat unleavened bread; even the first day ye shall put away leaven out of your houses: for whosoever eateth leavened bread from the first day until the seventh day, that soul shall be cut off from Israel." (Exodus 12:15)<sup>v</sup>

Leaven was symbolic of false doctrines and heresies that would cut them off from the kingdom of God. This can be seen in Jesus' instruction to his disciples. He said: "Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees." The disciples misunderstood what Jesus meant and he said further: "How is it that ye do not understand that I spake it not to you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees? Then understood they how that he bade them not beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees." (Matthew 16:6, 11-12)<sup>vi</sup>

The apostle Paul makes it clear that a little false doctrine corrupts the whole. He writes: "A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump." (Gal 5:9; see also 1 Cor 5:6) This is why the Israelites were commanded to purge their homes of leaven during the week of Passover. It was symbolic of purging their lives of false doctrines and heresies that could lead them to eternal separation from God which leads to eternal damnation, which is eternal death.

The instructions and warnings of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ are equally applicable to the word of God. A little false doctrine leaveneth or corrupts the whole word of God and can lead the unwary reader into eternal damnation. Isaiah wrote: "To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, it is because there is no light in them." (Isaiah 8:20) According to the Isaiah's inspired words, if a Bible has false doctrines, it has no light. The Apostle John writes: "Who is a liar but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist, that denieth the Father and the Son." (1 Jn 2:22) He further writes: "For many deceivers are entered into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist." (2 Jn 7)

The flesh that John is referring to is our flesh. We have a risen and living Saviour in Jesus Christ who comes into our flesh through the Holy Spirit when we invite him in. The Apostle Peter says that Jesus is a light that shines in a dark place which is our hearts; he writes: "We have also a more sure word of prophecy; whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the **day star arise in your hearts:**" (2 Pe 1:19) We know that Jesus is the day star that arises in our hearts because John tells us that Jesus is the day star in Revelation 22:16; he writes: "I Jesus have sent mine angel to testify unto you these things in the churches. I am the root and the offspring of David, and the bright and **morning star.**"

## God Ministry Gifts God Ordains On His True Servants

**Ephesians 4:11-14** – <sup>11</sup> And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; <sup>12</sup> For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: <sup>13</sup> Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ: <sup>14</sup> That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the

sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive;

## **False Teachings**

**2 Timothy 2:15-18** – <sup>15</sup> Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth. <sup>16</sup> But shun profane and vain babblings: for they will increase unto more ungodliness. <sup>17</sup> And their word will eat as doth a canker: of whom is Hymenaeus and Philetus; <sup>18</sup> Who concerning the truth have erred, saying that the resurrection is past already; and overthrow the faith of some.

**Romans 16:17-18** – <sup>17</sup> Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them. <sup>18</sup> For they that are such serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly; and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple.

## **Beware of Deceivers**

**2 Timothy 3:13** – But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived.

## **Beware of False Believers**

**Titus 1:10 & 16** – <sup>10</sup> For there are many unruly and vain talkers and deceivers, specially they of the circumcision... <sup>16</sup> They profess that they know God; but in works they deny him, being abominable, and disobedient, and unto every good work reprobate.

## **Beware of Teachers of Lies**

**1 Timothy 4:1-8** – <sup>1</sup> Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils; <sup>2</sup> Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron; <sup>3</sup> Without natural affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, <sup>4</sup> Traitors, heady, highminded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God; <sup>5</sup> Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away. <sup>6</sup> For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and lead captive silly women laden with sins, led away with divers lusts, <sup>7</sup> Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth. <sup>8</sup> Now as Jannes and Jambres withstood Moses, so do these also resist the truth: men of corrupt minds, reprobate<sup>a</sup> concerning the faith.

## Beware of False Apostles

**1 Corinthians 11:13-15** – <sup>13</sup> For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. <sup>14</sup> And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. <sup>15</sup> Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works.

## Beware of False Prophets

**Matthew 24:11-12** – <sup>11</sup> And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many. <sup>12</sup> And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold.

**1 John 4:1-3** – <sup>1</sup> Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world. <sup>2</sup> Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: <sup>3</sup> And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world.

**2 Peter 2:1-2** – <sup>1</sup> But there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction. <sup>2</sup> And many shall follow their pernicious ways; by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of.

**Matthew 17:15-20** – <sup>15</sup> Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. <sup>16</sup> Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? <sup>17</sup> Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. <sup>18</sup> A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. <sup>19</sup> Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. <sup>20</sup> Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

## Beware of False Christs

**Matthew 24:24** – For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect.

**Mark 13:21-22** – <sup>21</sup> And then if any man shall say to you, Lo, here is Christ; or, lo, he is there; believe him not: <sup>22</sup> For false Christs and false prophets shall rise, and shall shew signs and wonders, to seduce, if it were possible, even the elect.

**Luke 21:7-8** – <sup>7</sup> And they asked him, saying, Master, but when shall these things be? and what sign will there be when these things shall come to pass? <sup>8</sup> And he said, Take heed that ye be not deceived: for many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and the time draweth near: go ye not therefore after them.

## Discerning The True From The False

**Luke 4:4** – <sup>4</sup> And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written, That man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God.

**Isaiah 8:20** – <sup>20</sup> To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, it is because there is no **light in them**.

**1 John 4:1-3** – <sup>1</sup> Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world. <sup>2</sup> Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ **is** come in the flesh is of God: <sup>3</sup> And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ **is come in the flesh** is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world.

**Deuteronomy 18:22** – When a prophet speaketh in the name of the LORD, if the thing follow not, nor come to pass, that is the thing which the LORD hath not spoken, but the prophet hath spoken it presumptuously: thou shalt not be afraid of him.

## Summary

God has his faithful servants. God bestows ministry gifts on his servants. Among others, these gifts include: apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors and teachers. But there are also false believers, liars and deceivers. These people demonstrate false gifts of Apostles, Prophets and Teachers in order to deceive God's followers. God's faithful should have nothing to do with these deceivers and liars. They will mix truth and error but the error is like leaven which affects everything they teach.

In order to identify these liars and deceivers, God's believers must know his word. Deceivers and liars will reveal themselves by teachings that contradict the word of God. If they speak contrary to the word of God, "it is because there is no **light in them**." The word of God warns:

"Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils; Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron." (1 Timothy 4:1-2) "And many shall follow their pernicious ways; by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of." (2 Peter 2:2) At this time men "will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears; And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables." (2 Timothy 4:3-4) These "evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived." (2 Timothy 3:12-17) "Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them. For they that are such *serve not* our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly; and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple." (Romans 16:17-19) If we identify these deceivers we shall "henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive." (Ephesians 4:11-15) "Take heed that ye be not deceived." (Luke 21:7-9) for "many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many." (Matthew 24:8-13) They "shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect." (Matthew 24:24-26) These deceivers "profess that they know God; but in works they deny him, being abominable, and disobedient, and unto every good work reprobate." (Titus 1:9-16)

## #29

# Hope & Healing Today!

Jesus suffered, died and rose from the dead. Jesus did not just die for our sins; he suffered and died. Jesus died for the sins we have committed but he suffered for the sins that our committed against us. By the death and resurrection of Jesus Christ we can obtain eternal life. But through his suffering we can have physical, mental, emotional and spiritual healing in our lives today. The apostle Peter writes that by Jesus stripes (suffering) we were healed.

<sup>21</sup> For even hereunto were ye called: because **Christ also suffered for us**, leaving us an example, that ye should follow his steps: <sup>22</sup> Who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth: <sup>23</sup> Who, when he was reviled, reviled not again; when **he suffered**, he threatened not; but committed himself to him that judgeth righteously: <sup>24</sup> Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: **by whose stripes ye were healed.** (1 Peter 2:20-24)

Let us look at why Jesus can identify with each and every pain that afflicts our mind, emotions, heart, and body. We'll see that he was betrayed by a friend and abandoned by his friends; the religious leaders conspired against him; he was falsely accused, wrongly convicted and sentenced to death; he was humiliated and shamed, stripped naked and spit on; he was verbally, mentally and physically abused; he was crucified and died.

## Peace & Healing

### We Can Have Peace That Passes All Understanding

The peace that we can have through Jesus Christ passes all understanding because it is supernatural! This peace does not make sense. Jesus promises to give us peace when depression, pain, suffering and mental anguish should be our natural response. What He promises is beyond our understanding and often beyond our imagination. Yet, when we put our trust and faith in Him, in what He has promised and what He has done, He will bring healing and peace into our lives.

**Philippians 4:6-7** – <sup>6</sup> Be careful for nothing; but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God. <sup>7</sup> And **the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds** through Christ Jesus.

### Jesus Heals

**Malachi 4:2** – <sup>2</sup> But unto you that fear my name shall **the Sun of righteousness arise with healing in his wings**; and ye shall go forth, and grow up as calves of the stall.

**1 Peter 2:24** – <sup>24</sup> Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: **by whose stripes ye were healed.**

**James 5:16** – <sup>16</sup> Confess your faults one to another, and **pray one for another, that ye may be healed.** The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.

## Jesus Suffered For Us!

### The Religious Leaders Conspired Against Jesus

**Matthew 26:4-5** – <sup>3</sup> Then assembled together the **chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders** of the people, unto the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas, <sup>4</sup> And **consulted that they might take Jesus by subtilty, and kill him.**

**Luke 22:1-6** – <sup>1</sup> Now the feast of unleavened bread drew nigh, which is called the Passover. <sup>2</sup> And **the chief priests and scribes sought how they might kill him**; for they feared the people. <sup>3</sup> Then entered Satan into Judas surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve. <sup>4</sup> And he went his way, and communed with the chief priests and captains, how he might betray him unto them. <sup>5</sup> And they were glad, and covenanted to give him money. <sup>6</sup> And he promised, and sought opportunity to betray him unto them in the absence of the multitude.

**Matthew 26:59** – <sup>59</sup> Now **the chief priests, and elders, and all the council, sought false witness** against Jesus, to put him to death;

**Matthew 27:1-4** – <sup>1</sup> When the morning was come, all **the chief priests and elders of the people took counsel against Jesus to put him to death**: <sup>2</sup> And when they had bound him, they led him away, and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governor. <sup>3</sup> Then Judas, which had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders, <sup>4</sup> Saying, **I have sinned in that I have betrayed the innocent blood.** And they said, What is that to us? see thou to that.

**Matthew 27:11-18** – <sup>11</sup> And Jesus stood before the governor: and the governor asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the Jews? And Jesus said unto him, Thou sayest. <sup>12</sup> And when **he was accused of the chief priests and elders**, he answered nothing. <sup>13</sup> Then said Pilate unto him, Hearest thou not how many things they witness against thee? <sup>14</sup> And he answered him to never a word; insomuch that the governor marvelled greatly. <sup>15</sup> Now at that feast the governor was wont to release unto the people a prisoner, whom they would. <sup>16</sup> And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas. <sup>17</sup> Therefore when they were gathered together, Pilate said unto them, Whom will ye that I release unto you? Barabbas, or Jesus which is called Christ? <sup>18</sup> For **he knew that for envy they had delivered him.**

### Jesus Was Tempted

**Matthew 26:39** – <sup>39</sup> And he went a little further, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me: nevertheless not as I will, but as thou wilt.

**Luke 22:41-44** – <sup>41</sup> And he was withdrawn from them about a stone's cast, and kneeled down, and prayed, <sup>42</sup> Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me: nevertheless not my will, but



thine, be done. <sup>43</sup> And there appeared an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him. <sup>44</sup> And being in an agony he prayed more earnestly: and his sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground.

## Jesus Friends Did Not Comfort Him

**Mathew 26:36-40** – <sup>36</sup> Then cometh Jesus with them unto a place called Gethsemane, and saith unto the disciples, Sit ye here, while I go and pray yonder. <sup>37</sup> And he took with him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowful and very heavy. <sup>38</sup> Then saith he unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death: tarry ye here, and watch with me. <sup>39</sup> And he went a little further, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me: nevertheless not as I will, but as thou wilt. <sup>40</sup> **And he cometh unto the disciples, and findeth them asleep, and saith unto Peter, What, could ye not watch with me one hour?**

## Jesus Was Betrayed By A Friend

**Matthew 26:14-16** – <sup>14</sup> Then one of the twelve, called Judas Iscariot, went unto the chief priests, <sup>15</sup> And said unto them, What will ye give me, and I will deliver him unto you? And they covenanted with him for thirty pieces of silver. <sup>16</sup> And from that time he sought opportunity to betray him.

**Mark 14:43-46** – <sup>43</sup> And immediately, while he yet spake, cometh Judas, one of the twelve, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests and the scribes and the elders. <sup>44</sup> And he that betrayed him had given them a token, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he; take him, and lead him away safely. <sup>45</sup> And as soon as he was come, he goeth straightway to him, and saith, Master, master; and kissed him. <sup>46</sup> And they laid their hands on him, and took him.

## Jesus Was Abandoned

**Psalms 69:8** – <sup>8</sup> I am become a stranger unto my brethren, and an alien unto my mother's children.

**Psalms 69:20** – <sup>20</sup> Reproach hath broken my heart; and I am full of heaviness: and I looked for some to take pity, but there was none; and for comforters, but I found none.

**Matthew 26:55-56** – <sup>55</sup> In that same hour said Jesus to the multitudes, Are ye come out as against a thief with swords and staves for to take me? I sat daily with you teaching in the temple, and ye laid no hold on me. <sup>56</sup> But all this was done, that the scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled. Then **all the disciples forsook him, and fled.**

**Matthew 26:69-75** – <sup>69</sup> Now Peter sat without in the palace: and a damsel came unto him, saying, Thou also wast with Jesus of Galilee. <sup>70</sup> But he denied before them all, saying, I know not what thou sayest. <sup>71</sup> And when he was gone out into the porch, another maid saw him, and said unto them that were there, This fellow was also with Jesus of Nazareth. <sup>72</sup> And again he denied with an oath, I do not know the man. <sup>73</sup> And after a while came unto him they that stood by, and said to Peter, Surely thou also art one of them; for thy speech bewrayeth thee. <sup>74</sup> Then began he to curse and to swear, saying, I

know not the man. And immediately the cock crew. <sup>75</sup> And Peter remembered the word of Jesus, which said unto him, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice. And he went out, and wept bitterly.

**Matthew 27:32** – <sup>32</sup> And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name: him they compelled to bear his cross.

**Mark 15:21** – <sup>21</sup> And they compel one Simon a Cyrenian, who passed by, coming out of the country, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to bear his cross.

The soldiers got Simon the Cyrenian carried Jesus cross because non of Jesus friends were there to do it for him.

## Jesus Was Innocent And Wrongly Convicted

**John 18:38** – <sup>38</sup> Pilate saith unto him, What is truth? And when he had said this, he went out again unto the Jews, and saith unto them, I find in him no fault at all.

**John 19:6-16** – <sup>6</sup> When the chief priests therefore and officers saw him, they cried out, saying, Crucify him, crucify him. Pilate saith unto them, Take ye him, and crucify him: for **I find no fault in him**. <sup>7</sup> The Jews answered him, We have a law, and by our law he ought to die, because he made himself the Son of God. <sup>8</sup> When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he was the more afraid; <sup>9</sup> And went again into the judgment hall, and saith unto Jesus, Whence art thou? But Jesus gave him no answer. <sup>10</sup> Then saith Pilate unto him, Speakest thou not unto me? knowest thou not that I have power to crucify thee, and have power to release thee? <sup>11</sup> Jesus answered, Thou couldest have no power at all against me, except it were given thee from above: therefore he that delivered me unto thee hath the greater sin. <sup>12</sup> And from thenceforth **Pilate sought to release him**: but the Jews cried out, saying, If thou let this man go, thou art not Caesar's friend: whosoever maketh himself a king speaketh against Caesar. <sup>13</sup> When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he brought Jesus forth, and sat down in the judgment seat in a place that is called the Pavement, but in the Hebrew, Gabbatha. <sup>14</sup> And it was the preparation of the passover, and about the sixth hour: and he saith unto the Jews, Behold your King! <sup>15</sup> But they cried out, Away with him, away with him, crucify him. Pilate saith unto them, Shall I crucify your King? The chief priests answered, We have no king but Caesar. <sup>16</sup> **Then delivered he him therefore unto them to be crucified**. And they took Jesus, and led him away.

**Mark 15:9-15** – <sup>9</sup> But Pilate answered them, saying, Will ye that I release unto you the King of the Jews? <sup>10</sup> For he knew that the chief priests had delivered him for envy. <sup>11</sup> But the chief priests moved the people, that he should rather release Barabbas unto them. <sup>12</sup> And Pilate answered and said again unto them, What will ye then that I shall do unto him whom ye call the King of the Jews? <sup>13</sup> And they cried out again, Crucify him. <sup>14</sup> Then Pilate said unto them, Why, **what evil hath he done?** And they cried out the more exceedingly, Crucify him. <sup>15</sup> And **so Pilate, willing to content the people**, released Barabbas unto them, and **delivered Jesus, when he had scourged him, to be crucified**.

**Luke 23:13-5** – <sup>13</sup> And Pilate, when he had called together the chief priests and the rulers and the people, <sup>14</sup> Said unto them, Ye have brought this man unto me, as one that perverteth the people: and, behold, **I, having examined him before you, have found no fault in this man** touching those things whereof ye accuse him: <sup>15</sup> No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him; and, lo, **nothing worthy of death is done unto him**. <sup>16</sup> I will therefore chastise him, and release him. <sup>17</sup> (For of necessity he must release

one unto them at the feast.) <sup>18</sup> And they cried out all at once, saying, Away with this man, and release unto us Barabbas: <sup>19</sup> (Who for a certain sedition made in the city, and for murder, was cast into prison.) <sup>20</sup> Pilate therefore, willing to release Jesus, spake again to them. <sup>21</sup> But they cried, saying, Crucify him, crucify him. <sup>22</sup> And he said unto them the third time, Why, **what evil hath he done? I have found no cause of death in him:** I will therefore chastise him, and let him go. <sup>23</sup> And they were instant with loud voices, requiring that he might be crucified. And the voices of them and of the chief priests prevailed. <sup>24</sup> And **Pilate gave sentence that it should be as they required.** <sup>25</sup> And he released unto them him that for sedition and murder was cast into prison, whom they had desired; but **he delivered Jesus to their will.**

## Jesus Was Physically Abused

**Isaiah 52:14** – <sup>14</sup> As many were astonished at thee; his visage was so marred more than any man, and his form more than the sons of men:

**Matthew 26:67-68** – <sup>67</sup> Then did they spit in his face, and buffeted him; and others smote him with the palms of their hands, <sup>68</sup> Saying, Prophesy unto us, thou Christ, Who is he that smote thee?

**John 19:1-3** – <sup>1</sup> Then Pilate therefore took Jesus, and scourged [whipped] him. <sup>2</sup> And the soldiers platted a crown of thorns, and put it on his head, and they put on him a purple robe, <sup>3</sup> And said, Hail, King of the Jews! and they smote [hit] him with their hands.

## Jesus Was Humiliated and Shamed

**Psalm 69:7** – <sup>7</sup> Because for thy sake I have borne reproach; shame hath covered my face.

**Psalm 69:19** – <sup>19</sup> Thou hast known my reproach, and my shame, and my dishonour: mine adversaries are all before thee.

**Psalm 22:13 & 18** – <sup>13</sup> They gaped upon me with their mouths, as a ravening and a roaring lion.... <sup>18</sup> They part my garments among them, and cast lots upon my vesture.

**Matthew 27:35** – <sup>35</sup> And they crucified him, and parted his garments, casting lots: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, They parted my garments among them, and upon my vesture did they cast lots.

**Isaiah 50:6** – <sup>6</sup> I gave my back to the smiters, and my cheeks to them that plucked off the hair: I hid not my face from shame and spitting.

**Matthew 26:67-68** – <sup>67</sup> Then did they spit in his face, and buffeted him; and others smote him with the palms of their hands, <sup>68</sup> Saying, Prophesy unto us, thou Christ, Who is he that smote thee?

**Matthew 27:28-30** – <sup>28</sup> And they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet robe. <sup>29</sup> And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put it upon his head, and a reed in his right hand: and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail, King of the Jews! <sup>30</sup> And they spit upon him, and took the reed, and smote him on the head.

**Matthew 27:39-43** – <sup>39</sup> And they that passed by reviled him, wagging their heads, <sup>40</sup> And saying, Thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days, save thyself. If thou be the Son of God, come down from the cross. <sup>41</sup> † Likewise also the chief priests mocking him, with the scribes and elders, said, <sup>42</sup> He saved others; himself he cannot save. If he be the King of Israel, let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe him. <sup>43</sup> He trusted in God; let him deliver him now, if he will have him: for he said, I am the Son of God.

## Jesus Was Tortured

**Isaiah 52:13-15** – <sup>13</sup> Behold, my servant shall deal prudently, he shall be exalted and extolled, and be very high. <sup>14</sup> As many were astonished at thee; his visage was so marred more than any man, and his form more than the sons of men: <sup>15</sup> So shall he sprinkle many nations; the kings shall shut their mouths at him: for that which had not been told them shall they see; and that which they had not heard shall they consider.

**Psalms 22:14-17** – <sup>14</sup> I am poured out like water, and all my bones are out of joint: my heart is like wax; it is melted in the midst of my bowels. <sup>15</sup> My strength is dried up like a potsherd; and my tongue cleaveth to my jaws; and thou hast brought me into the dust of death. <sup>16</sup> For dogs have compassed me: the assembly of the wicked have inclosed me: they pierced my hands and my feet. <sup>17</sup> I may tell all my bones: they look and stare upon me.

**Psalms 69:21** – <sup>21</sup> They gave me also gall [poison] for my meat; and in my thirst they gave me vinegar to drink.

**Matthew 27:34** – <sup>34</sup> They gave him vinegar to drink mingled with gall [poison]: and when he had tasted thereof, he would not drink.

**Mark 15:36** – <sup>36</sup> And one ran and filled a sponge full of vinegar, and put it on a reed, and gave him to drink, saying, Let alone; let us see whether Elias will come to take him down.

## Jesus Felt Abandoned By God

**Psalms 22:1-2** – <sup>1</sup> My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? why art thou so far from helping me, and from the words of my roaring? <sup>2</sup> O my God, I cry in the daytime, but thou hearest not; and in the night season, and am not silent.

**Mark 15:34** – <sup>34</sup> And at the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani? which is, being interpreted, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

**Matthew 27:46** – <sup>46</sup> And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? that is to say, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

# Strong Holds of Bitterness

## Watch Out For Bitterroot Strong Holds

Jesus came to set the captives free. Bitterness over the sins others have committed against you can lead to a stronghold of bitterness that can bring you into captivity. It can defile you and take away your peace.

**Hebrews 12:12-15** – <sup>13</sup> And make straight paths for your feet, lest that which is lame be turned out of the way; but **let it rather be healed.** <sup>14</sup> Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord: <sup>15</sup> Looking diligently lest any man fail of the grace of God; **lest any root of bitterness springing up** trouble you, and thereby many be defiled;

## Prayer Is Our Weapon Against Strongholds of Bitterness

**2 Corinthians 10:3-6** – <sup>3</sup> For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh: <sup>4</sup> (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds;) <sup>5</sup> Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ; <sup>6</sup> And having in a readiness to revenge all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled.

## Summary

Jesus suffered for us. The leaders of His church conspired against Him; He was tempted; His friends failed to comfort Him; He was betrayed by a friend; His Friends abandoned Him; He was wrongly convicted; He was humiliated and shamed, stripped naked and spit on; He was verbally, mentally and physically abused; He felt abandoned by God; He was crucified and died. Because of all that Jesus suffered, He can identify with each and every pain that afflicts our mind, emotions, heart, and body.

Jesus suffered and by His stripes we are healed. We are promised the peace that passes all understanding. This peace can only come from God; it is a miracle. This miracle of God will keep us from developing a strong hold of bitterness. If we have developed a stronghold of bitterness, Jesus can heal it and take it away. A strong hold of bitterness can often be the root cause of nagging sin problems in our lives.

We can obtain the healing through Jesus' suffering by having faith in the fact that Jesus has healed us. We then go to God in prayer and thanksgiving. We ask God to search our hearts and mind and to reveal to us our negative thoughts and feelings (Psalm 129:23-24). We then simply turn all that pain and suffering and negative thoughts and feelings over to God. We ask Him for the healing that He has promised and we thank Him for answering our prayer and for providing our healing through Christ's suffering.

# Prayer

## Step 1: Prayer

Oh my my loving God and Father, I humbly come before you to ask for your healing and for the peace that passes all understanding. Search my thoughts and try my heart oh God. Please reveal my negative thoughts and feelings and my hidden pain. Father, I am particularly seeking those negative thoughts and feelings that are the bitterroot strongholds behind (list your sin problems).

## Step 2: Wait In Silence

[Wait in silence for God to reveal your negative thoughts and feelings and your hidden pain.]

## Step 3: Prayer

Dear Jesus, I thank you for suffering and dying for me, in my place. Thank you for taking all my sins, pain and suffering upon yourself including: (List your sins, pain and suffering, thoughts and feelings; particularly whatever God revealed to you in Step 2.)

After dieing, you rose again in order to heal my wounded heart and set me free from (List your sins, pain and suffering, thoughts and feelings; particularly whatever God revealed to you in Step 2.) Your light of love and truth is now shining in my heart as I receive my true identity as you (son/daughter). In the name of Jesus Christ I pray, Amen.

## Step 4: Repeat As Necessary

My loving God and Father, are there any other sins, wounds or lies that are keeping me from experiencing the peace that passes all understanding which you have promised and giving me total freedom in (list area in your life for which you need healing and freedom), I thank You for hearing and answering my prayer. [Wait in silence for God to speak.]<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> This study and prayer is based on the work of Paul and Cristina Coneff in association with Straight 2 the Heart, Inc. You can visit their website at <http://www.straight2theheart.com/>

# #30

## The Sinner's Prayer

As we have learned – God hath predestined each of us to eternal life. “For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life.” (John 3:16) Jesus lived a sinless life, then he gave his life freely, He died for our sins; he died the death that was ours and then rose from the dead. In dying for us, he be

But while we have been predestined to eternal life and the price has already been paid, God has given us free will. We can choose to accept Jesus as our savior or we can reject him. The choice is ours and our eternal destination depends on our choice. I plead with you to choose life – accept Jesus Christ as your Lord and Savior. When you accept Jesus, his perfect righteousness becomes yours.

If you have never given your life to Jesus Christ, I invite you to pray the prayer below. If you have given your life to Jesus before, I invite you to pray the prayer below and renew your commitment.

Lord God, loving Father in heaven, I confess that I broken your law, I am a sinner and I am in need of salvation through Jesus Christ. I repent of my sins and I turn away from a life of sin. I pray for your forgiveness of my sins. I pray that You will cover me and wash me in the blood of Jesus Christ. I put on the righteousness of Christ and I pray that I may be filled with your Holy Spirit.

Lord, may Your Holy Spirit guide me and direct my paths. May I thirst for your Holy word and may I have insight and understanding of Your word. May Your word give me wisdom and knowledge.

I declare with my lips and my heart that Your holy word is true: Jesus Christ is the creator of all things; He always was and always shall be. Jesus came to earth as a child; He was born of a virgin mother; He lived a sinless life; He suffered and died on the cross for my sins and the sins of the world. He was buried and on the third day He rose from the dead; He ascended into heaven and is seated at the right hand of the Father.

I pray that You would write my name in the Book of Life, save me from the day of trouble and count me among Your remnant. May heavenly angels be placed round about me to protect me from all evil harm and evil influence. I ask all these things in the name of your Son the Lord Jesus Christ, Amen!

If you prayed this prayer for the first time, there are several things you must do:

- Let someone know that you have given your life to Jesus Christ for he stated: “Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heaven.” (Matthew 10:32)
- Pray that God would guide you to a group of believers who keep God's commandments, who can baptize you and who you can worship with and study with.
- You want to develop a close relationship with God. The following is part of this: You want to keep God's commandments. You want to develop a daily prayer life which includes confession and repentance. You want to learn to praise and worship God. You want to consistently study the word of God. And you want to learn to hear the voice of God.

- You should also be open to hearing what God has revealed to his modern day Prophets. In Amos 3:7 we read: “Our Lord God will do nothing without first revealing it to His prophets.” But you also must test a prophet so that you are not deceived by false prophets, liars and deceivers. To test a prophet or any teacher you must learn God's word so that you won't be deceived by false teaching.
- Get connected with some good teaching and training ministries (see resource list in appendix). God gives gifts of service to all believers but He has chosen certain believers to receive ministry gifts. These ministry gifts are for leading, teaching, training healing and ministering to his saints. While the body of Christ would seem to esteem miracles and healing as the highest of the gifts, the word of God clearly states differently. Paul lays out some of the leadership gifts in order of authority, they include: “first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues.” (1 Corinthians 12:28) Other ministry gifts include pastors and evangelists (Ephesians 4:11).



# Appendix

There are many good teaching and training ministries; I have relied upon many for my research. Many good books and ministries are identified in the endnotes. But while good teaching is important, nothing will replace personal Bible study. Only by knowing the word of God can one identify those who are preaching and teaching the true word of God. There are a great many who are *not* teaching God's truths, they are teaching lies and apostasy! Apostate ministries need to be avoided at all costs.

The short list below is composed of ministries I trust. There are many others but I have selected these because I feel they are providing important teaching and training for the trying years ahead. Since I can't predict what they may teach in the future or what guests they may have on their radio or TV programs, I don't necessarily endorse everything taught by these ministries or their guests.

- Americas Coming Judgment, [www.americascomingjudgment.com](http://www.americascomingjudgment.com), check us out for new information, Bible Studies, Videos, The Book “*The Soon Coming Judgment of God Upon America and How to Escape It*” and other information.
- World Ministries International, [www.worldministries.org](http://www.worldministries.org). Jonathan Hansen is a Prophet to the nations. Check out his prophecy for America, his bi-monthly newsletter and his daily radio and TV program.
- Amazing Facts, [www.amazingfacts.org](http://www.amazingfacts.org). Check out their online library, online Bible studies, and radio and TV program.
- It Is Written, [www.iiv.org](http://www.iiv.org). Check out their TV program and online Bible studies.
- Save America Ministries, P.O. Box 70879, Richmond, VA 23255, [www.saveus.org](http://www.saveus.org). Check out Chuck's daily *View Point* radio program.
- The Prophecy Club, P.O. Box 750234, Topeka, KS, (785) 266-1112, [www.prophecyclub.com](http://www.prophecyclub.com). Check out there selection of CD's, Videos, DVD's and Books and their daily radio broadcast which is available on the Internet. They also provide training in various cities around the country.
- America's Last Days, David Eells, 6 Apache Trail, Pensacola, FL 32506, [www.americaslastdays.com](http://www.americaslastdays.com). I highly recommend David's books *Sovereign God For Us And Through Us* and *Hidden Manna For The End Times*.
- Radio Liberty, <http://www.radioliberty.com>. Stanley Monteith had a daily radio interview program but has passed away. Check out his broadcast archives and books and tapes. He has one of the best collections of Books and Tapes.
- Hagmann and Hagmann Radio Show, <http://www.hagmannandhagmann.com/>, Daily Talk Christian Talk show with excellent Christian guests.

- i Psalm 19:9, 119:7, 62, 106, 137, 164; Romans 2:5; 2 Thessalonians 1:5; Revelation 17:7 and 19:2.
- ii Genesis 7:1-16.
- iii Genesis 19:1-29.
- iv 2 Kings 19:30-31; Isaiah 1:8-9; Jeremiah 15:11; Ezekiel 9:4-6.
- v See also Exodus 12:19-20; 13:3, 7; 23:18; 34:25; Leviticus 2:11; 6:17; and Deuteronomy 16:3-4.
- vi See also Mark 8:15 and Luke 12:1.